## TRAVELS

AND

### ADVENTURES

OF

Mademoiselle de RICHELIEU,

Cousin to the present DUKE of that NAME,

Who made the Tour of E UROPE, dreffed in Men's Cloaths, attended by her MAID LUCY as her Valet de Chambre.

Now done into English from the Lady's own MANUSCRIPT,

By the TRANSLATOR of the ME-MOIRS and ADVENTURES of the Marques of BRETAGNE and Duke of HARCOURT lately published in Dublin.

### DUBLIN:

Printed by Oli. Nelson, in Skinner-Row,

For the Translator; and fold by Richard Gunne, Sarah Hyde,
George Grierson, George Ewing, John Smith, George Faulkner,
Abraham Bradley, Thomas Moore, Peter Wilson, Joseph Rhames,
William Powell, Peter Lautal, and James Keating, BookSellers, M.DCC. XLIV;

Mademalelle de Decreta

SHIJCI to Peroredeer at such La M A M

Type male the Tour of E D X D P E with The Marketing on the state at 12 O U

Now done tota Lacretta from the Lacrett's beat MANUSORTHAN.

By the TRARESTON of the .. FAULTON VOATE TOTOM deposit and the second state of the HEALT MANUEL AND AREAST ASSESSED.

is fired in Dahlin.

DEU B

Principle Of the Report ve that her recombered after I Abraham Straigh, Lamas Alecter van 1944 William Power Town Lantel, and State Sellers, Mi,DCC, May 19



### THE

# TRAVELS

OF

### Mademoiselle de Richelieu.

fhould follow common Form, that is to fay, deduce my Origin from a long Race of illustrious Ancestors, and conclude the pompous Introduction with a Word or two to the Male Sex, who think it a monstrous Presumption in a Woman to pretend to write; but I would have those vain Creatures Vol. I.

B

to know, that though, out of our great Condescension, we may allow them the masculine. nervous Stile, yet the foft and tender is all our own. They may perhaps draw a stronger Picture of turbulent Life, describe Battles with the Breath of Fire and Fury, dip their Pens in Blood, and give Death its proper Colours; but for the fofter Scenes of Life the Pencil must be ours.

I AM pretty certain, if ever my Travels are published, that your serious old flegmatick Fellows, and the wrinkled antiquated Matrons will cry, Fie upon this impudent Girl to shake off the Modesty of the Sex, and gallop over the World to fatisfy the mad Whims of a romantic Brain. Why truly, as your Notion of a Woman is, that she is a domestic Tool designed for no other Use but to satisfy the brutal Inclinations of her Lord and Master Man, my Scheme of Life must give you offence, and your Indignation will still rife higher, when I very fairly and plainly tell you, that I abhor the shameful Drudgery to which my Sex is fatally subjected in propagating the Species, that I am highly fenfible of our Misery in this Disposition of Nature, and find that I have a Soul as capable of noble and refined Sentiments, as those male Things who would fain make us meer Machines formed by God and Nature, for no other Purpose but to ferve their Pleasures. Nay, I believe in my Conscience, you could chime in with that old doating Fool of a Stoic who very gravely faid, · Women were a Sort of Tubs prepared to hold the Juice of Life till it ripens into Maturity.'

This is a Tale of a Tub with a Witness, and if the World were to depend on my Tub, the Source of Life should be at an End; for I swear I had rather be metamorphofed into a Tobaccostopper, a Broomstick, or a Grid-iron. So much by way of Introduction. Let me now fet out upon my Adventures, as a Cavalier, whom Curiofity, and an insuperable Passion to see the World, have dragged from the calm and eafy Occupations of the tender Sex, to the Dangers and Fatigues that attend travelling; but first of all, it will be proper to inform the Reader how this Whim, or Madness if you will, first entered my Brain, and by what Means it rose to such a fettled Resolution, that neither the Representation of Friends, nor the Dangers, which I could not but forfee, were capable to make me relinquish my Design.

My Father, who was a Lieutenant-General in the King's Armies and Governor of Liste in French Flanders, (an Officer, as I have been told, respected in the Army) died when I was but two Years old, and his only Child. My Mother of the Epernon Family, passionately fond of her Husband, sell into a State of Languishing after his Death, which never less her till she was laid into the same Grave with her Husband about two Years after. An Uncle on the Mother's Side was my Guardian, and placed me in a Convent of Ursuline Nuns at Paris, under the Inspection of his Sister, who was Priores.

THIS Lady, whom Grates and Vows confined within the narrow Precinct of a Cloyster, often complained of her Prison, for depriving her of visiting, in Person, those Countries, of which she with so much Pleasure read the Defcriptions, and often harangued upon the Advantages which Men had of making themselves acquainted with the Customs and Manners of different Parts of the World; fo that I longed to travel before I could well walk, and what with Books, and my Aunt's Lectures, at the Age of Twelve, I was just as fond of Travelling as the; and fully refolved, when I could dispose of myself as I thought proper, to make the Tour of Europe dressed in Mens Cloathes. At the Age of Twenty-five, my Guardian put me in Possession of an Estate, of about 15000 Livres yearly Rent, and 100,000 Livres ready Money, which he had faved during my Minority, after paying some Debts which my Father had contracted. It was then I began feriously to think of commencing Knight Errant, and of metamorphofing myfelf into fomething that had, at least, the Appearance of a Man; my Complexion a little brownish, my Stature about five Foot four Inches with the Adayntage of not being full chefted, were so favourable to my Defign, that in the whole Course of my rambling my Disguise was never once suspected, and more than one fair Lady did me the Honour to receive my Addresses, as a Lover very capable of bringing an Intrigue to the last Perfection; and tho' I always took Care when Things were coming to a Crisis to throw Disappointments in that I was neither suipected of Indifference, Treachery, nor the unpardonable Crime of Incapacity.

THE Public is not to expect in my Travels, those extraordinary Events which never existed, but in the Writer's own Imagination: what I relate is Fact, and with the discreet and thinking Part of the World, Truth in its native Simplicity has more Charms than Romance dreffed out with all the Art of Invention and Elegance of Stile. I do not indeed pretend to youch for the Truth of some secret Court Intrigues in Politics and Gallantry which I learned; but thus far I can fafely fay, that I have neither added nor diminished, and that the Persons who informed me were of a distinguished Rank, and esteemed to be People of Veracity and Honour. As for my own Remarks upon the Customs and Manners of Countries, wherein I disagree with other Authors, I shall endeavour to justify with Reasons founded upon Observation and Experience; and as to my Characters of particular Perfons in high Stations, I shall only say, that my Pen is neither dipt in Gall nor Honey. I have, indeed lashed Vice wherever I found it, even in the Palaces of crowned Heads, without being awed by the Frowns of a Royal Debauchee, or bribed by his Smiles, to conceal his Faults; and if I have dealt impartially on this Side, I have, on the other, equally done Justice to Merit and Virtue from the King to the Cobler.

Your morose hum-drum Readers will never be able to bear this vain Character of my Integrity; but let me tell them by way of a Secret, that as my Book is not to make its Appearance in the World, 'till I am got into Abraham's Bofum; and as there is Odds on my Side, that it will make a pretty good Figure, they will be forced to allow that I am modest, at least, in that Respect; besides, I never looked upon a little Pride and Vanity to be a Failing in our Sex; in Men, indeed, they are unpardonable, but in us, if they cannot, strictly speaking, be called Virtues, they very much contribute, however, to make us virtuous; and were it not for these two happy Defects in our Constitution, many poor frail Females would confent to gratify Passions, to which we are all more or less subjected; but Thanks to our Pride and Vanity we dare face the Enemy, and force them to honourable Terms; fuch was the Case of a beautiful young Lady of my Acquaintance, who having made a noble Stand against the Efforts of a preffing agreeable Lover, fung her Vicctory in the following irregular Lines.

A se rendre a L'hymen peut-on être blamable, A sixer même le jour peut-on être coupable; Mais si L'homme presomptueux croit donter nos coeurs,

Par ses Sermens parjures, par ses caresses slateurs; Et non content d'avoir Sçu triempher de L'innocence.

Il jouit encore de son crime par une noire vengeance; Que tel soit à jamais livré aux remords de son ame, Qu'il voutre dans le bourbier d'une honteuse flamme;

Et qu' enfin rendu au bout de sa triste carriere, On le voit sans regret en monçeau de poussiere.

### Thus PARAPHRASED:

We'll yield to Hymen's Laws, even fix the Day, Of our Surrender in an honest Way; Or on such Terms as Honour will admit, And when 'tis glorious for us to submit; But if the false deluding Creature Man, Be vain enough to fancy that he can Subject our Pride, entice our honest Hearts With Vows and Oaths, and all the practis'd Arts Of sly Deceit, that knows no other Aim, But first to tempt, and then to blast our Fame; Let such long wallow in the Mire of Lust, And then unpitied moulder into Dust.

Now I warrant this little poetical Digression will be nibbled at by some of your quibbling Critics; but I will tell them once for all, that as there can be no elegant Entertainment without what the French call Entremets\*, so no Work of this Kind can be diverting without Digressions! and if this won't do, be it known to you all, and every one of you, that I love them, and will have them regularly inserted, or Woe be to the Publisher whoever he may be.

Bainty Diffes ferved before the Fruit,

I fancy it will be no new Thing to tell you, that we French Folks believe as firmly as we do our Creed, that France is the most beautiful, the most powerful, and the most opulent Kingdom in the World, and if we add the most civilized; 'tis not surprizing that any of us, who have an Itch for travelling, should begin with our own dear Country, which we are to visit with all possible Exactness; that we may be ready on all Occasions, to shew how far it exceeds any other.

THOSE who are fond of tedious Descriptions may look into the delices de la France \*; for my Part I hate them, and am resolved in the whole Course of my Travels to be as short as possible in the descriptive Part, chusing rather to entertain my Readers with a particular Account of the Government, Laws, Trade, Customs and Manners of the several Countries which I have visited, (not forgetting the Intrigues and Gallantries of the different Courts) than to take up their Time and my own, in long Differtations upon the Architecture of Houses and Churches; about which, even the Connoisseurs in different Countries are as little agreed as the Priests about Religion. An Italian will very gravely tell you, that the true Genius of Architecture, Sculpture, Painting and Music is peculiar to his own Country, and that all the rest of Europe are at best but bungling Copiers. I re-

The Delights of France,

member to have read in one of their Authors the following short but satyrical Remark: ' The French, says he, shew the Unevenness of their Tempers in the Irregularity of their Buildings; the English their Pride and Vanity, in attempting to refine upon us; the Spaniards think it beneath them to change their Taste in Houses or Habits, and an Escu-' rial is to them a more beautiful Piece of Architecture than a Hundred fuch as Ver-' failles; give a Dutchman a Stove and Trade and he is happy; and the other Countries of the North think a Wooden House painted on the Outside, with Bachus's on Hogsheads, ' large German Glasses, Pipes and Tobacco, infinitely more beautiful than Marble Statues and Pillars. Ceci foit dit en paffant; this by f the by.

BEFORE I enter upon the Government of France, I shall first give my Opinion in general of Kings and Kingly Government, which will be thought monstrous by my own Countrymen, at least a good many of them, who are for absolute unlimited Power in the Prince; but as I have no Notion of being a Slave, with their good Leave, I will lay this down as a certain Maxim, That the Laws of every Nation are the Measure of Magistratical Power. There is, I know, a certain celebrated Author\*, who lays much Weight upon the Word Hereditary; but the Question is, What is inherited in an heredi-

<sup>.</sup> Mr. de Thou.

tary Kingdom, and how it comes to be hereditary? 'Tis in vain to fay the Kingdom; for we do not know what is meant by it; 'tis one thing in one Place, and very different in others; and and I think it not easy to find two in the World that in Power are exactly the same: If this Author understands all that is comprehended within the Precincts over which it reaches, I deny that any fuch is to be found in the World: If he refers to what preceding Kings enjoyed, no Determination can be made, 'till the first Original of that Kingdom be examined, that it may be known what that first King had, and from whence he had it.

IF this Variety be denied, I defire to know whether the Kings of Sparta and Persia had the same Power over their Subjects; if the same, whether both were absolute, or both limited; if the last, how came the Decrees of the Perfian Kings to pass for Laws? If absolute, how could the Spartan Kings be subject to Fines, Imprisonment, or the Sentence of Death, and not have Power to fend for their own Supper out of the Common-Hall? Why did Xenophon call Agefilaus a good and faithful King, obedient to the Laws of his Country, when, upon the Command of the Ephori, he left the War that he had with fo much Glory begun in Asia, if he was fubject to none? How came the Ephori to be established to restrain the Power of Kings, if it could no way be restrained, if all owed Obedience to them and they to none? Why did Theopompus's Wife reprove him for fuffering his Power to be diminished by their Creation, if it could

could not be diminished? Or, why did he say he had made the Power more permanent in making it less odious, if it was perpetual and una!terable? We may go farther, and taking Xenophon and Plutarch for our Guides, affert that the Kings of Sparta never had the Powers of War or Peace, Life and Death, which de Thou esteems inseparable from Regality, and conclude, either that no King has them, or that all Kings are not alike in Power. If they are not in all Places the fame, Kings do not reign by an universal Law, but by the particular Laws of each Country, which give to every one fo much Power, as in the Opinion of the Givers conduces to the End of their Institution, which is the public Good.

IT may be also worth our Inquiry how this inherited Power came to be hereditary. We know that the Sons of Vespasian and Constantine inherited the Roman Empire, tho' their Fathers had no fuch Title; but having gained the Empire, by Violence, which is meer Tyranny that can create no Right, they could devolve none to their Children. The Kings of France of the three Races have inherited the Crown; but Meroveus Pepin and Hugh Capet could neither pretend Title nor Conquest, or any other Right than what was conferred upon them by the Clergy, Nobility and People; and confequently whatfoever is inherited from them can have no other Original; for that is the Gift of the People which is bestowed upon the first, under whom the Successors claim, as if it had been by a peculiar Act given to every one of them. It will

will be more hard to shew how the Crown of our Neighbours the English became hereditary, unless it be by the Will of the People; for tho' it were granted that some of the Saxon Kings came in by Inheritance, yet William the Norman did not, for he was a Bastard and could inherit nothing; neither did William Rufus and Henry, for their elder Brother Robert, by Right of Inheritence, ought to have been preferred before them: Stephen and Henry the Second were in the same Case; for Maud, the only Heiress of Henry the First, was living when both were crowned; as little did Richard and John succeed by Right of Inheritance, for they were both Bastards born in Adultery. They must therefore have received their Right from the People, or they could have none at all; and their Succeffors fall under the fame Condition.

I find a great Variety in the Deduction of this hereditary Right. In Sparta there were two Kings of different Families endowed with an equal Power. If the Heraclidæ did reign as the Fathers of the People, the Eacidæ did not; if the Right was in the Eacide, the Heraclide could have none; for 'tis equally impossible to have two Fathers as Two thousand. 'Tis in vain to fay that two Families joined and agreed to reign jointly; for it is evident the Spartans had Kings before the Time of Hercules or Achilles, who were the Fathers of the two Races. If it be faid that the regal Power, with which they were invested, did entitle them to the Right of Fathers, it must in like Manner have belonged to the Roman Confuls, military

tary Tribunes, Dictators and Pretors; for they had more Power than the Spartan Kings; and that glorious Nation might change their Fathers every Year, and multiply or diminish the Number of them as they pleased. If this be most ridiculous and absurd, 'tis certain that the Name and Office of King, Consul, Dictator, or the like, does not confer any determined Right on the Person who has it: Every one has a Right to that which is allotted to him by the Laws of the Country by which he is created.

As the Persians, Spartans, Romans or Germans, might make fuch Magistrates, and under fuch Names as best pleased themselves, and accordingly enlarge or diminish their Power, the fame Right belongs to all Nations, and the Rights due unto, as well as the Duties incumbent upon every one, are to be known only by the Laws of that Place. This may feem strange to those who know neither Books nor Things, Histories nor Laws, but is well explained by Grotius, who denying the Sovereign Power to be annexed to any Name, speaks of divers Magistrates under several Names that had. and others that under the same Names had it not: and diffinguishes those who have the summum Imperium summo modo, from those who have it mode non Summo: And tho' probably he looked on the first Sort as a Thing meerly speculative, if by that fummo modo, a Right of doing what one pleases be understood; yet he gives many Examples of the other. Among those who had liberrimum Imperium, he names the Kings of the Sabeans; who nevertheless were under such a VOL. I.

Condition, that tho' they were, as Agatharchidas reports, obeyed in all Things, whilst they continued within the Walls of their Palace, might be stoned by any that met them without it.

THE Law that gives and measures the Power, prescribes Rules how it should be transmitted. In some Places the supreme Magistrates are annually elected, in others their Power is for Life; in some they are meerly elective, in others hereditary under certain Rules or Limitations. The ancient Kingdoms and Lordships of Spain were hereditary; but the Succession went ordinarily to the eldeft of the reigning Family, not to the nearest in Blood. This was the ground of the Quarrel between Corbes the Brother, and Orfua the Son of the last Prince, decided by Combat before Scipio. I know not whether the Goths brought that Custom with them when they conquered Spain, or whether they learned it from the Inhabitants; but certain it is, that keeping themfelves to the Families of the Balthei and Amalthei, they had more Regard to Age than Proximity, and almost ever preferred the Brother, or eldest Kinsman of the last King before his Son. The like Custom was in use among the Moors in Spain and Africa, who according to the feveral Changes that happened among the Families of Almohades, Almoranides, and Benemerini, did always take one of the reigning Blood; but, in the Choice of him, had most respect to Age and Capacity. This is usually called the Law of Thanestry; and, as in many other Places, prevailed also in Ireland, till that Country fell under the English Government.

In France and in Turky the Male that is nearest in Blood succeeds; and I do not know of any Deviation from that Rule in France, fince Henry the First was preferred before Robert his elder Brother, Grandchild to Hugh Capet: But notwithstanding the great Veneration they have for the royal Blood, they utterly exclude Females, left the Crown should fall to a Stranger, or a Woman (who is feldom able to govern herfelf,) should come to govern so great a People. Some Nations admit Females, either fimply, as well as Males; or under a Condition of not marrying out of their Country, or without the Confent of the Estates, with an absolute Exclusion of them and their Children if they do; according to which Law in Force among the Swedes. Charles Gustavus was chosen King upon the Refignation of Queen Christina, as having no Title; and the Crown fettled upon the Heirs of his Body, to the utter Exclusion of his Brother Adolphus, their Mother having married a German. Tho' divers Nations have differently disposed their Affairs, all those that are not naturally Slaves, have preferred their own Good before the personal Interests of him that expects the Crown, fo as upon no Pretence whatever to admit of one who is evidently guilty of fuch Vices as are prejudicial to the State. For this Reason the French, tho' much addicted to their Kings, rejected the vile Remainders of the Merovingian Race, and made Pepin, the Son of Charles Mortel, King: And when his Descendants fell into the like Vices, they were often deposed, till at last they were wholly rejected, and the Crown given given to Capet and to his Heirs male as formerly. Yet for all this, Henry his Grandchild being effeemed more fat to govern than his elder Brother Robert, was made King, and that Crown still remains in his Descendants; no Consideration being had of the Children of Robert, who continued Dukes of Burgundy during the Reigns of ten Kings. And in the Memory of our Fathers, Henry of Navarr was rejected by two Assemblies of the Estates, because he differed in Religion from the Body of the Nation, and could never be received as King, till he had renounced his own, tho' he was certainly the next in Blood, and that in all other Respects he excelled in those Virtues which they most esteem.

WE might enumerate a multitude of other Examples, were it not too tedious; and as the various Rules, according to which all the hereditary Crowns of the World are inherited, shew that none is set by Nature, but that every People proceeds according to their own Will; the frequent Deviations from those Rules do evidently testify. That Salus Populi of Lex suprema, and that no Crown is granted otherwise than in Submission to it.

But the there were a Rule, which in ne Case ought to be transgressed, there must be a Power of judging to whom it ought to be applied. 'Tis perhaps hard to conceive one more precise than that of France, where the eldest legitimate Male in the direct Line is preferred, and yet that alone is not sufficient. There may be Bastardy in the Case: Bastards may be thought legitimate,

gitimate, and legitimate Sons Bastards. The Children born of Isobel of Portugal during her Marriage with John the Third of Castile were declared Baftards, and the Title of the House of Austria to that Crown depends upon that Declaration. We often fee that Marriages which have been contracted, and for a long Time taken to be good, have been declared Null; and the Legitimation of Lewis XIV. is founded folely upon the Abolition of the Marriage of Henry IV. with Marguerite of Valois, which for the Space of twenty-feven Years was thought to have been good. Whilft Spain was divided into five or fix Kingdoms, and the feveral Kings linked to each other by mutual Alliances, incestuous Marriages were often contracted, and upon better Consideration annulled; many have been utterly void thro' the Preingagement of one of the Parties. These are not feigned Cases, but such as happen frequently, and the Diversity of Accidents, as well as the Humours of Men, may produce many others, which would involve Nations in the most fatal Diforders, if every one should think himself obliged to follow fuch a one who pretended a Title that to him might feem plaufible, when another should set up one as pleasing to others, and there were no Power to terminate those Disputes to which both must submit, but the Decision must be left to the Sword.

This is that which I call the Application of the Rule, when it is as plain and certain as human Wisdom can make it; but if it be left more at large, as where Females inherit, the Difficulties are inextricable: And he that fays, the next Heir is really King when one is dead, before he be so declared by a Power that may judge of his Title, does, as far as in him lies, expose Nations to be split into the most desperate Factions, and every Man to fight for the Title which he fancies to be good, till he destroy those of the contrary Party, or be destroyed by them. The English did not look upon Robert the Norman as King of England after the Death of his Father; and when he endeavoured, on pretence of Inheritance, to impose himself upon the Nation that thought fit to prefer his younger Brothers, he paid the Penalty of his Folly, by the Lofs of his Eyes and Liberty. The French did not think the Grandchild of Pharamond to be King after the Death of his Father, nor feek who was the next Heir of the Merovingian Line, when Chilperic the Third was dead; nor regard the Title of Charles of Lorrain after the Death of his Brother Lothair, or of Robert of Burgundy eldest Son of King Robert; but advanced Merovius, Pepin, Capet and Henry the First, who had no other Right but what the Nobility and People be-Howed upon them. And if fuch Acts do not destroy the Pretences of all who lay claim to Crowns by Inheritance, and do not create a Right, I think it will be hard to find a lawful King in the World, or that there ever has been any; fince the first did plainly come in like Nimrod, and those who have been ever fince Histories are known to us, owed their Exaltation to the Consent of Nations, armed or unarmed, by the Deposition or Exclusion of the Heirs of such as had reigned before them. What dull Entertainment. tainment, what dry Stuff, cry the Young and Gay! but have a little Patience and I'll please you by and by; in the mean Time if what is already said upon Government in general, or what I am to add upon that of France in particular does not go down with you, why even leave these Pages to the Perusal of your serious sort of Folks who deserve at least something for their Money. Now to the Point—and you young Folks to your Task of turning over a few Leaves without so much as reading one Line as you would oblige your humble Servant.

THE Succession not being well settled in the Time of Meroveus, who had dispossessed the Crandchildren of Pharamond, he was no sooner dead than Gillon set up himself, and with much Slaughter drove his Son Chilperic out of the Kingdom; who after a little Time returning with like Fury, is said to have seen a Vision, first of Lions and Leopards, then of Bears and Wolves, and lastly of Dogs and Cats, all tearing one another to Pieces. This has been always accounted by the French to be a Representation of the Nature and Fortune of the three Races that were to command them, and has been too much verified by Experience.

Clovis their first Christian and most renowned King, having exceedingly enlarged his Territories, chiefly by the Murders of Alaric, and Ragnacaire with his Children, and suborning Sigismond of Metz to kill his Father Sigibert, left his Kingdom to be torn in Pieces by the Rage of his four Sons, each of them endeavouring to make himself

himself Master of the whole; and when, according to the usual Fate of such Contests, Success had crowned Clothair who was the worst of them all, by the Slaughter of his Brothers and Nephews, with all the Flower of the French and Gaulish Nobility, the Advantages of his Fortune only resulted to his own Person. For after his Death the miserable Natives suffered as much from the Madness of his Sons, as they had done by himself and his Brothers. They had learned from their Predecessors not to be slow in doing Mischief, but were farther incited by the Rage of two infamous Women, Fredegonde and Brune-haud.

Chilperic the Second, who by the Slaughter of many Persons of the royal Blood, with infinite numbers of the Nobility and People, came to be Master of so much of the Country as procured him the Name of King of France, killed his eldest Son on Suspicion that he was excited against him by Brunehaud, and his second, less the should revenge the Death of his Brother: He married Fredegonde, and was soon after killed by her Lover Landry.

THE Kingdom continued in the same Misery through the Rage of the surviving Princes, and found no Relief, tho' most of them sell by the Sword, and that Brunehaud, who had been a principal Cause of those Tragedies, was tied to the Tails of sour wild Horses and tore Limb from Limb, since a Plague more mortal than their Fury ensued by the Saccession of ten slothful Kings whom the French call Les Rois faineans.

SOME

Some may fay, they who do nothing do no Hurt; but this Rule will not hold with respect to Kings. He that takes upon him the Government of a People, can do no greater Evil than by doing nothing, nor be guilty of a more unpardonable Crime, than by Negligence, Cowardice, Voluptuousness, and Sloth, to desert his Charge. Virtue and Manhood perish under him; good Discipline is forgotten; Justice slighted; the Laws perverted or rendered useless; the People corrupted; the publick Treasures exhausted; and the Power of the Government always falling into the Hands of slattering Favourites, a Way is laid open for all manner of Disorders.

THE Reigns of Septimius Severus, Mahomet the Second, or Selim the Second, were cruel and bloody, but their Fury was turned against Foreigners, and some of their near Relations, or against such as fell under the Suspicion of making Attempts against them: The Condition of the People was tolerable; those who would be quiet might be fafe; the Laws kept their right Course; the Reputation of the Empire was maintained, the Limits defended, and the publick Peace preferved. But when the Sword paffed into the Hands of lewd, flothful, foolish, and cowardly Princes, it was of no Power against foreign Enemies, or the Disturbers of domestic Peace, tho' always sharp against the best of their own Subjects. No Man knew how to fecure himself against them, unless by raising Civil Wars; which will always be frequent, when a Crown defended by a weak Hand is proposed as a Prize to any that

that dare invade it. This is a perpetual Spring of Diforders, and no Nation was ever quiet, when the most eminent Men found less Danger in the most violent Attempts, than in submitting patiently to the Will of a Prince who fuffers his Power to be managed by wicked Men, whose constant Study is to flatter him in his Vices. But this is not all, for besides the Mischiefs brought upon the Public by the Lofs of eminent Men, who are the Pillars of every State, fuch Reigns are always accompanied with Tumults and Civil Wars; the great Men striving with no less Violence who shall get the weak Prince into his Power, when such Regard is had to Succesfion that they think it not fit to divest him of the Title, than when with less Respect they contend for the Sovereignty it felf. And whilst this fort of Princes reigned, France was no less afflicted with the Contests between Grimbauld, Ebroin, Grimoald, and others for the Mayoralty of the Palace, than it had been before by the Rage of those Princes who had contested for the Crown. The Issue also was the same: After many Revolutions, Charles Martel gained the Power of the Kingdom, which he had fo bravely defended against the Saracens; and having transmitted it to his Son Pepin, the general Assembly of the Estates, with the publick Approbation, conferred the Title also upon him. This gave the Nation present Ease, but the deep-rooted Evil could not be fo cured, and the Kingdom, which by the Wisdom, Valour, and Reputation of Pepin, had been preserved from Civil Troubles during his Life, fell as deeply as ever into them fo foon as he was dead. HIS

HIS Sons Carloman and Charles, divided the Dominions; but in a little Time each of them would have all. Carloman filled the Kingdom with Tumult, raised the Lombards, and marched with a great Army against his Brother, till his Course was interrupted by Death, as is supposed, caused by such Helps as Princes liberally afford to their aspiring Relations. Charles deprived his two Sons of their Inheritance, put them in Prison, and we hear no more of them. His third Brother Griffon was not more quiet, nor more successful, and there could be no Peace in Gascony, Italy or Germany, till he was killed. But all the Advantages which Charles, by an extraordinary Virtue and Fortune, had purchased for his Country, ended with his Life.

HE left his Son Lewis the Gentle in Possession of the Empire and Kingdom of France, and his Grandson Bernard King of Italy; but these two could not agree; and Bernard falling into the Hands of Lewis, was deprived of his Eyes, and some Time after killed. This was not enough to preserve the Peace: Lothair, Lewis and Pepin, all three Sons to Lewis, rebelled against him, called a Council at Lions, deposed him, and divided the Empire amongst themselves.

AFTER five Years he escaped from the Monastery where he had been kept, renewed the War, and was again taken Prisoner by Lothair. When he was dead, the War broke out more fiercely than ever between his Children: Lothair the Emperor assaulted Lewis King of Bavaria

varia, and Charles King of Rhetia, was defeated by them and confined to a Monastery, where he died.

NEW Quarrels arose between the two Bro. thers upon the Division of the Countries taken from him, and Lorrain only was left to his Son. Lewis died foon after; and Charles, getting Possession of the Empire and Kingdom, ended an inglorious Reign, in an unprosperous Attempt to deprive Hermingrade, Daughter to his Brother Lewis, of the Kingdom of Arles, and other Places left her by her Father. Lewis his Son, called the Stutterer reigned two Years in much Trouble, and his only legitimate Son Charles the Simple was not much happier; for Robert Duke of Anjou raised War against him, and was crowned at Rheims, but was himself foon after flain in a bloody Battle near Soiffons.

His Son-in-law, Herbert Earl of Vermandois, gathered up the Remains of his scattered Party, got Charles into his Power, and called a General Assembly of Estates who deposed him, and gave the Crown to Raoul Duke of Burgundy; tho' he was no otherwise related to the Royal Blood than by his Mother, which in France is nothing at all.

AFTER his Death, Lewis, Son to the deposed Charles was made King; but his Reign was as inglorious to him as miserable to his Subjects. This is the Peace which the French enjoyed for the Space of five or six Ages, under their Monarchy;

narchy; and 'tis hard to determine, whether they suffered most by the Violence of those who possessed, or the Ambition of others who aspired to the Crown; and whether the Fury of active, or the baseness of slothful Princes was most pernicious to them; but upon the whole Matter, thro' the Desects of those of the latter Sort, they lost all they had gained by Sweat and Blood, under the Conduct of the former.

Henry and Otho of Saxony, by a Virtue like that of Charlemagne, deprived them of the Empire, and fettled it in Germany, leaving France only to Lewis, sirnamed Outremer, and his Son Lothair, who feemed to be equally composed of Treachery, Cruelty, Ambition and Baseness; they were always mutinous and always beaten; their frantick Passions put them always upon unjust Designs, and were such Plagues to their Subjects and Neighbours, that they became equally deteffed and despised. These Things extinguished the Veneration due to the Memory of Pepin and Charles, and obliged the whole Nation, rather to feek Relief from a Stranger than to be ruined by their worthless Descendants. They had tried all Ways that were in their Power, deposed four crowned Kings, within the Space of an Hundred and fifty Years; crowned five, who had no other Title than the People conferred upon them, and restored the Descendants of those they had rejected, but all was in vain; their Vices were incorrigible, the Mifchiefs produced by them intollerable; they never ceased from murdering one another in Battle, or by Treachery, and bringing the Nation into Vol. I.

Civil Wars upon their wicked or foolish Quarrels, 'till the whole Race was rejected, and the Crown placed upon the Head of Hugh Capet.

THESE Mischies raged not in the same Extremity under him and his Descendants; but the Abatement proceeded from a Caufe no way advantageous to absolute Monarchy. French were, by their Calamities, taught more strictly to limit the regal Power; and by turning the Dukedoms and Earldoms into Patrimonies, which had been Offices, gave an Authority to the Chief of the Nobility, by which that of Kings was curbed; and though, by this Means, the Commonality were exposed to some Hardships, yet they were small in Comparison of what they had fuffered in former Times. When many great Men had Estates of their own, that did not depend upon the Will of Kings, they began to love their Country; and tho' they chearfully served the Crown in all Cases of public Concernment,, they were not eafily engaged in the personal Quarrels of those who possessed it, or had a Mind to gain it.

were obliged to use their Vassals gently, which made Monarchy easier and less tumultuous, than when the King's Will had been less restrained; but still there was a Root remaining, that from time to time produced poisonous Fruit. Civil Wars were frequent among them, though not carried on with such desperate Madness as formerly, and many of them upon the Account of Disputes between Competitors for the Crown.

All

All the Wars with England, fince Edward the Second married Isabella Daughter, and, as he pretended, Heir of Philip le Bel, were of this Nature. The Defeats of Crecy, Poitiers and Agincourt, with the Slaughters and Devastation suffered from Edward the Third the Black Prince, and Henry the Fifth, were merely upon Contests for the Crown. The Factions of Orleans and Burgundy, Orleans and Armagnac, proceeded from the same Spring, and the Murders that seem to have been the immediate Cause of those Quarrels, were only the Effects of the Hatred growing from their Competition.

THE more odious, though less bloody Contests between Lewis the Eleventh, and his Father Charles the Seventh, with the Jealoufy of the former against his Son Charles the Eighth arose from the same Principle. Charles of Bourbon proposed to fill France with Fire and Blood upon the like Quarrel, when his Defigns were everthrown by his Death in the Assault of Rome, If the Dukes of Guise had been more fortunate, they had foon turned the Cause of Religion into a Claim to the Crown, and repaired the Injury done, as they pretended, to Pepin's Race, by destroying that of Capet; and Henry the Third thinking to prevent this by the Slaughter of Henry le Balafré, and his Brother the Cardinal de Guise, brought Ruin upon himself, and cast the Kingdom into a most horrid Confusion.

THE Duke of Orleans was several Times in Arms against Lewis XIII. his Brother; the D 2 Queen

Queen Mother drew the Spaniards to favour him; Montmorency perished in his Quarrel; Fontrailles revived it by a Treaty with Spain. which struck at the King's Head as well as the Cardinal's, and was suppressed by the Death of Cing Mars and de Thou. Those who understand the Affairs of this Kingdom make no Doubt that the Count de Soiffons would have fet up for himself, and been followed by the best Part of France, if he had not been killed in the Pursuit of his Victory at the Battle of Sedan. Since that Time the Kingdom has fuffered fuch Disturbances as shew, that more was intended than the Removal of Mazarin; and the Mareschal de Turenne was often told, that the Check he gave to the Prince of Condé at Gien, after he had defeated Hocquincourt, had preserved the Crown upon the King's Head. And to testify the Stability, good Order, and domestic Peace that accompanies absolute Monarchy, our Fathers have feen in their own Days the House of Bourbon often divided within itself; the Duke of Orleans, the Count de Soifsons, and the Princes of Condé and Conti in War against the King; the Dukes of Angoulesme, Vendome, Longueville, the Count de Moret, and other Bastards of the Royal Family following their Example; the Houses of Guise, D'Elbeuf, Bouillon, Nemours, Rochefocault, and almost all the most eminent in France, with the Parliaments of Paris, Bordeaux, and some others joining with them.

I might add many more Examples to shew that this Monarchy, as well as all others, has from

from the first Establishment been full of Blood and Slaughter through the Violence of those who possessed the Crown, and the Ambition of fuch as aspired to it; and that the End of one Civil War has been the Beginning of another; but I presume that what is already said will be fufficient to prove, that it never enjoyed any permanent domestic Quiet; and if, after all, this long Historical Account should not satisfy the Curious, let the Author, from whom I copied every Word of it, and a terrible Piece of Drudgery it was, stand up and plead his own Cause; for my Part, I am so little curious about what the World did before I came into it. or what will happen after I leave it, that whoever reads my Travels ought to look upon this long winded Story of the Succession of Kings in France to be a Compliment rather paid to their Taste than to my own.

As I had been constantly in a Convent from my Infancy, I was as little known in Paris as at Japan; and as all my Acquaintance confifted in Nuns, and some Boarders whom I left in the Convent when I came out of it, there was not fo much as a Possibility of my being discovered; To that I might act the petit Maitre, do and fay what I pleased when I was once got into my short Coat and Breeches; and I assure you it was no small Satisfaction to me to think that I should, at least for some Years, be exempted from the triffling unnecessary Rules of Decorum, which a Woman, who has any Regard to her Character, must observe. I am neither a Prude nor a Coquet, but a whimfical Sort of a D3 Creature

Creature who loves roving, and to know a little more of the World than what is usual; and to please you, I'll add necessary for my Sex.

LIKE all wife People who consider the Instability of human Affairs, I fettled mine, and made my Will in due Form, not knowing how foon I might have Occasion to be run through the Body for the Sake of some fair Lady, or upon fome Punctilio of Honour. At first I own I was in fome Doubt about my Courage; and tho' I have no Tafte for Matrimony, I would have much rather contributed to bring a Creature into the World than to put him out of it; but when I found that Men, generally speaking, drew their Swords more for their Reputation than to kill their Adversaries, I followed the common Example some two or three Times, and found that my Antagonists had no more Intention to kill me than I had to destroy them; so that if we drew Blood it was but a meer Scratch in a proper Place, to prevent the Imputation of Cowardice; but as Instances of my Heroism and Bravery cannot properly be brought in here, though, to my great Praise be it spoken, I very often bring in Things Heels over Head, I shall be a little upon my Guard at this Time; and instead of Blood and Wounds and clashing of Swords, tell you a Story, or rather give you a Song, which may be of no small Use to your Topers of both Sexes.

THE levely Polignac, the sprightly Paraberre, the gay St. Etienne, and pretty Courbon, cloyed at last with a long uninterrupted Round of of Love and Gallantry, refolved to devote themfelves wholly and folely to the jolly God of Wine, admitting no Male Creature into their Society; but a certain Abbé, Nephew to the Cardinal de Bois, a Man of Wit and Humour, and a Topper non-fuch.

On a certain Day, marked by red Letters, in the Feasts of Bacchus, our four new Votaries went in solemn Procession to the Elisian Fields \*, where, with awful Reverence, under the cooling Shade of a tall and spreading Elm, the lovely Polignac, as Priestess for the Day, put up this short pathetic Prayer.

Qu'en ce jour nous puissions, O Dieu de la treille,

Effacer nos chagrins, et chanter tes merveilles; Qu'en vin de Champagne nous fassions la guerre Au Dieu de L'amour, aux hommes sur la terre Inconstans et Volages, qui courent de belle en belle

Comme le plus grand des Dieux a ses Maitresses infidelle.

Va t'en petit Aveugle, ton regne tire a fa fin Vive Bacchus notre Dieu et Bourgogne pour le vin.

#### Thus PARAPHRASED.

O powerful Bacchus! O lovely God of Wine, Let us this Day in Bowls of brifk Champaign

d

<sup>\*</sup> Adjoining to the Garden of the Thuilleries,

#### The TRAVELS of 32

Drown all our Cares, despise the God of Love.

And Man, the Monster, made to cheat, and rove

From Fair to Fair, as Poets fing of Yove. Cupid be gone, thy Reign is at a Close, Bacchus is our God, and Burgundy our Dose.

WHEN they had performed what we may call a Libatory Sacrifice to their new Deity, for you must know that every one of them had a Glass of Champaign, which they first tasted, and then with their foft and delicate Hands, fprinkled the Wine upon the Head of a Marble Statue representing Bacchus: after which they retired with great Decency to Madam Paraberre's House, where an elegant Entertainment was prepared for them. I shall not trouble you with their Bill of Fare; but you may take it for granted, there was no Penury of delicate Ragoos, and polite Fricassees, besides Pheasand-Pouts, red Legged Partridge and Ortolans, all in the polite Goust of bien mortisie, which a Clown of an Englishman would call stinking Stuff, and fing, "O! the roaft Beef of Old f England."

A Footman was dispatched for the priviledged Abbé, who, having nothing to do that Morning, went to Church, where the Servant found him and delivered his Message; you may judge how welcome it was, when I tell you he was in such a Hurry that he forgot to take his Hat with him, and never thought of it till he was got half Way to the Lady's House, but

creat.

then

then it was too late; for one of those industrious People, commonly called Pick-pockets, had seized on the Ecclesiastical Beaver, by way of Exchange, for his own, which he honestly lest for the Abbé's Use.

WHEN Dinner was over, and Bottles placed on the Table, Wine and Wit flowed in Deluges. It was at last proposed, that, in Honour of the Day, every Lady should make a Couplet to a Tune then in high Vogue, and of which, for the Satisfaction of my singing Readers, I have prick'd down the Notes; but that the Abbé might not be without an Opportunity of displaying his Wit, it was resolved, that it should be his Task to make the Chorus; all unanimously agreed to the Proposal; and the Lady of the House began:

M. Paraberre.

De ee jus delicieux, L'amour Soait tirer sa gloire; C'est pour nous enstammer mieux, Qu'il nous ordonne d'en boire.

Le cheur.

Par L'abbé.

Buvons, buvons, buvons tous, En amans fidelles Tout autant des coups Que voudront nos belles.

M. Polignac.

Non, pour moi si je ne bois, L'amour n'est point redoutable; Pour m'engager sous ses lois Il faut qu'il me prenne a table. Buvons, &c.

M. St.

M. St. Etienne.

Dans cette aimable Liqueur,

Quand L'amour trempe ses

armes;

Les coeurs en ont plus d'ardeur,

Les yeux en ont plus de charmes.

Buvons, &c.

M. Courbon.

Venus jointe a ses appas, L'ardeur que Bacchus lui donne, Et c'est apres le repas Que l'heur du Berger sonne. Buvons, &c.

### TRANSLATION.

Paraberre.

To the Grape's delicious Juice, Cupid owes his Fame and Glory; It warms the Heart, and clears the Voice, To fing a wanton Story.

Chorus by the Abbé.

Fill your Glasses, drink away, Tiplers are but Asses; Oft's the Word and the Way, To please our jolly Lasses.

Polignac.

No, for me I dread not Love,
But with Wine when I'm a
bouzing;
He that fain my Heart would move
Must try when I'm carouzing.
Fill, &c.

St. Etienne.

St. Etienne.

Cupid's Arrows dipt in Wine,
Pierce our Hearts with so much
Vigour;
That should a Lover not try mine,
Adieu to Pride and Rigour.
Fill, &c.

M.Courbon.

When with Venus, hand in hand, Bacchus joins in Courtly wooing, There's not a Lady in the Land But yields to her Undoing.

Fill, &c.

The TUNE.



I fhould

I should now, in Pursuance of the Plan which I have laid down, endeavour to give an accurate Description of our royal Palaces, which Curiofity led me to examine with fo much Exactness, that if I pleased I could write a Quire of Paper upon the Blunders in the Architecture, and Disposition of the Apartments; but as I have already declared my Aversion to the Drudgery of long Descriptions, I shall only in general lay, that Verfailles, towards the Gardens, is grand and magnificent, though not firictly regular; but the Fore-front to the great Avenue is a murdered Kind of Amphitheatre, which, however, might be eafily remedied, by raising it one Story higher; but his present Majesty seems to have no great Taste that Way, delighting more in Hounds and Horses than in building Castles; and if Lewis XIV. had not added to many grand Qualities a large Share of Vanity, no Versailles, no Marli, had been seen in our Days. Trienon, which may be properly enough called the Seat of Love, wast he Invention of Madam Maintenon, and were the Cabinet of Mirrours, to represent the amorous multiplied Scenes that passed in that Cell of Venus, how strange would the Prospect be? They tell us a Story of Father La Chaife, Lewis XIV's Confessor, which I have been assured was Fact. The good old Jesuit often teized the King upon his Amours; some will maliciously tell you more for political than religious Reasons, but I look upon this Infinuation to be uncharitable; for, if we can believe any thing at all, he was certainly grieved at his Master's disorderly derly Life, and often read him Lectures on Futurity, which now and then threw the libidinous Monarch into Fits of Devotion; but though the Spirit was willing the Flesh was weak, poor sensual Lewis was always repenting and always sinning, till Decay of Nature put a Stop to his Career.

MADAM Maintenon, after many fruitless Attempts to gain the clamorous Priest, resolved at last to put his Virtue to a severe Trial by a Temptation hard for Flesh and Blood to withstand, the lovely Miss Scarron her Cousin was a bewitching Girl and a very proper Person to manage a Scheme of this kind, but as the Priest was a Courtier and a Man of great Penetration. all Maintenon's Contrivance (which to speak the Truth was what we may call tip-top) was necesfary to hook him in, and confequently a long round-about Scheme was to be laid down to prevent Suspicion, for the Children of Loyola \* are fadly mistrustful. Well the royal W- with the persuasive Eloquence of Diamond Ear-rings and Necklace, which Miss Scarron wanted and was very forry for it, eafily prevailed with her to undertake her Part in the Farce that was to be May Scarcon and Traker In Chaile, . bette

#### Plot of the Farce.

In the first Act Miss Scarron was to affect upon all Occasions to show the Priest an uncommon Respect, to admire every Thing he said,

s

15

ly

S,

a-11,

or-

riv

rugad a soud towards a

<sup>\*</sup> The Patron of the Jesuits.

and to have it buzz'd in his Ears from all Corners that the thought him the most accomplished Man of the whole Society of Jesus.

In the second Act she was to practise, according to the strict Rules of Art, stollen Glances, downcast Eyes, Blushes, Sighs, and all the little pretty Symptoms of Love.

In the third and last the whole Plot was to be unravelled in the Cabinet of Mirrours, where the honest Jesuit was under most terrible Convulsions from the obstinate Combat of the Flesh and the Spirit, and had it not been for the Intercession of his beatisfied Patron at the Throne of Grace, the Disciple alas I had fallen, had fallen. The Scene was moving and the Temptation strong, but before I enter upon the particular Description of it, which I believe would be better left out considering the Sensibility of some Readers, I shall put down the Copies of three or four Letters which I will warrant to be authentick.

# 02500250025002500250025002

Miss Scarron to Father La Chaise.

MY Hand shakes, my Heart quakes, my Blood runs rapid in its Course, Tears burst from my Eyes, Sleep from me slies, how wretched is my Fate! from Morn to Night I sigh and mourn, in restless Anguish on my Bed I turn; why was I made a Partner of the Light, who never have a happy Day nor Night? What cruel

W

60

cruel Star into the World me brought? What unkind Hand to nurse me (Orphan) fought? What Thing fo dear as I hath Effence bought? The smallest living Things which Nature wrought are freed of Woe: While I in black Despair, and gnawing Anguish my own Tomb prepare. O! woful Life! Life, No, but living Death, a Gem exposed to Fortune's flormy Breath; frail Boat of Cristal in a rocky Main, still lost with Terror and still kept with Pain; when did mine Eyes behold one chearful Morn? When did not angry Stars my Projects scorn? When had my toffed Soul one Night of Reft? O! now I find what is for Mortals best, even, fince our Voyage but shameful is and short, soon to Arike Sail and perish in the Post. But ere F fink, 'tis fit to let you know; that by your Means these Sorrows on me flow, and should you cruel to poor Scarron prove, the dies a Victim to unhappy Love.



## Father La Chaise's Answer.

Received your poetical Profe, in which I find a Mixture of Madness and Wit; if you are seriously in Love with an old Jesuit, who can have no Communication with your Sex but in the Character of Adviser, I must conclude that your Ladyship is forely troubled with Vapours, if not seriously mad; and the best Service I can do you at present is to get a Recipe

V

I

d

t,

at

el

Recipe from the King's first Physician, which I shall send you to-morrow Morning; and my next Step will be to exhort Madam Maintenon to get you a Husband as speedily as possible, for I truly think you are in a dangerous Way.

Adieu.

i

ti

h

п

3

18

2

W

th

in

m

th

na

m

yo

## 

iem exposed to Esperancia

## Miss Scarron's Reply.

I Am indeed in a dangerous Way, but how can you be fo barbarous as to sport with my Misfortune! what can the whole Faculty prescribe to cure a broken Heart, and what Satisfaction can there be in the Arms of a Man whom we can not love. I know very well that I can have no reasonable Pretensions to your Heart, as it is fortified with Vows of Celibacy and Chaftity against the Attacks of Love; but you must know very little of this Passion, if you imagine that it can be governed by Reason. When first I felt the Poison reach my Heart, I thus argued the Cafe with my felf, poor filly Fool, who is the Object of thy Wishes? a Man! No, a Thing only in the Likeness of a Man, who has solemnly vowed never to propagate his Species; a Drone, a Creature useless to Society, and whom Heaven made a Male fit to answer the Purposes for which he existed; but who, from a mistaken Notion of Purity, as you Priests term it, openly declares War against the established Laws

Laws of Nature. Monstrous Custom! horrid Abuse! to what else are owing the scandalous Intrigues of Friars and Nuns, but to the Prohibition of Marriage: Do you think it an easy Matter for a Man or a Woman in full Vigour to get the better of the ftrongest of all the fenfual Appetites, the Struggle is terrible if they conquer, and the Fall shameful! if they yield; why should they be reduced to this Dilemma? why excluded from the Privileges to which Nature has entitled them, and their Lives rendered miserable and wretched by an Abstinence that destroys the End of Creation, and, as it is often involuntary, cannever conduct them to that fublime Virtuewhich they pretend to be the Motive of their Sacrifice? and which I very freely fhall terms the Motive of their Folly; for had Providence intended that a felect Number of human Creatures should deny themselves those Enjoyments to which by our Frame and Conflitution we have a natural Propenfity, is it not: highly probable that they would have been made of a different Mould from the rest of the Species, that they might not be eternally harraffed by the Members of the Flesh warring against the Spirits; but you know that no Male without he be a perfect Man, with respect to the Members of his Body, can be admitted? into the holy Order of Priesthood, and if so, must he not from that Perfection be liable to the Imperfections, or rather, I think, to the natural Confequences of his Manhood. I make no doubt but that in your Answer, if you deign to favour me to far, after you have E 35

2

n

d

75

fully vented your Spleen against Creatures wallowing in the Mire of Senfuality, you'll fly to your strong Hold the miraculous Operations of Grace, by which we are enabled to furmount all carnal Inclinations. Far be it from me to deny the Power of the supreme Being, but still I can not conceive how what was originally planted in our Natures, no doubt for wife and good Ends, must be eradicated by the omnipotent Power in a miraculous Manner, that we may attain to a higer State of Perfection than what was thought necessary for us in our first Constitution. As an Advifer, fince you are determined to deal with me in no other Character, I hope you'll favour me with your Sentiments upon this dark Point, perhaps they may rectify mine, nay even spiritualise them to such a Degree that all Sensuality will be intirely banished out of the Question, and I shall love you as my ghostly Father without any Wishes that can offend the Delicacy of your Profession, or give you the least Disturbance; but till then you must allow me to tell you that I have other Defires and Wishes than what are purely and simply spiritual.



Father La Chaise to Miss Scarron.

CINCE you call upon me in a folemn Manner to give you my Opinion or rather to answer your Objection 'Why what was originally

ginally planted in our Natures must be eradicated in a miraculous Manner, that we may be enabled to attain to a higher State of Perfection than what was thought necesfary for us in our first Constitution.' I shall very feriously and with great Concern tell you, that I find you are not only under the Influence of carnal Inclinations, but would willingly make them noble as well as necessary Ornaments of human Nature, and by that means destroy the Merit of Chastity and Celibacy in the Clergy and religious Orders; but pray consider the Difference of human Nature before and after the Fall: Had Man remained fuch as he was created, his Paffions (if they could properly bear that Name) would have been moderate and governable, but after his Disobedience they became violent, ungovernable by Reafon or Religion, and confequently not to be conquered but by the immediate Influence of the divine Spirit in a miraculous Manner. If this short Explication can rectify your Sentiments and bring them to be fuch as may not make me ashamed to correspond with you, I shall look upon your happy Change as the Effects of Providence, and shall always be glad to cultivate the Seeds of Grace in you, till your Wishes at last are

become purely and fimply spiritual.

ne

er ri-Ly

## 

Miss Scarron to Father La Chaise.

O fancy that a Girl of Eighteen can be confined to Wishes such as your Letter concludes with, is not less absurd than to imagine a Man of four Score and ten a gay fprightly Fellow. Your spiritualising Scheme does mighty well in the Imagination of an old worn out Confessor, but you may as well talk. to me of a World in the Moon as of a Man or Woman's divesting inemselves of certain Inclinations, fo that all your Theological Rhetorick will never perfuade me that I ought to act in direct Opposition to what the Author of Nature designed me: "Tis, I own, your Trade to preach up Chastity, Continence, and all That, and 'tis right to do fo for political as well as religious Reasons; nay I am positive that a Priest ought to do so, tho' he befully convinced in his Conscience that there neither is nor can be any fuch Thing in Nature; this I fay may be a very necessary and justifiable Practice with the indifcreet or ignorant Part of the Sex, but that you should very gravely order me (whom I believe you. don't take for a meer Simpleton) to strip my felf of Flesh and Blood and love you a la mode des Anges \*, I humbly beg leave, good Father; to tell you that I neither can nor will take

<sup>-</sup> In the Angelical Manner

take your Advice, for Reasons which I shall make very obvious to you at a proper Occafion; in the mean time let me exhort you, in my Turn, to throw off the Mask, and to deal with me as you would with a Bosom-Friend; take all the Precautions that jesuitical Policy can suggest, believe me a Cheat, a jansenian Tool bribed to serve a Turn, a Snake in the Grass, in short, a Creature who professes Love with no other Design but to expose you, and as such put me to the severest Trials that you can possibly devise, but if after all you find me honest and fincere in what I profess, use me kindly, make me happy. Can you imagine that I have fo little Regard to my own Reputation that I would facrifice it for the uncertain Pleasure of making you pass for a Man of Gallantry, I say uncertain, for 'tis ten to one but the Society would have the Art and Interest in this Case, as in some others which I could instance, to make my Story pass in the Opinion of the Public for a malicious Aspersion, and I might very readily have the Fate of Miss Fierville who was a little free with the Character, as you very well know, of the right reverend Father Turnemine of your Society, the least I could expect would be to be shut up within four bare Walls and to have the comfortable Diet of Bread and Water till it pleafed the Society to allow me more substantial Food. I don't love Ab-Rinence nor to mortify the Body, and therefore for my own Sake, tho' I had no Regard for you, it is to be prefumed that I would take

care to keep council \*, and but alas! where am I hurrying? what Infatuation makes me break through all the Rules of Modesty to perfuade a cruel ungrateful Man that I am a weak fimple fond Fool! O! my Heart why dost thou not rather break than thus to expose me! fure I dream, or I am mad, and fancy it to be Love; foolish Girl, recal thy banished Reason. -- Ah! would it were no more, would I could rave, fure that would give me Ease, and rob me of the Sense of Pain, at least, among my wandering Thoughts I should fome Time light upon—and fancy him to. be mine, kind Madness would flatter my poor feeble Wishes, and fometimes tell me he is not lost -- not irrecoverably -- not for ever lost-well fatal but dear Caufe of my Mifery, fince thy Heart is inaccessible to Love let it not be barred against Pity; can there be any Thing more glorious than to relieve the Wretched, think of this; and let that bewitching Eloquence to which I have but too too often liftened with fond Extaly, undo its own Work.

You know, I suppose, that his Majesty and Madam Maintenon are to take the Diversion of Angling on the great Canal Tomorrow after Dinner, for Heaven's Sake let us take that Opportunity of an Interview in the Cabinet of Mirrours, where I shall have the multiplied Mortification of observing in your severe Looks and my own deep Blushes the Folly that you tell me I am guilty of, and

S

to

a

d. I

S

<sup>\*</sup> Que j'aurois soin d'avoir bouche cousue.

of receiving, I hope, from your cold Indifference a Cure which is above the Power of my Reason.



The Father's Answer to the above.

MAN more rigid than I would laugh at your Distemper, the he supposed it to be real, which I scarce can do; however, as it is possible, my Profession obliges me to grant your Request, and to do all that Christian Chariry requires of me; with this View I shall come to the Place appointed To morrow at three o' Clock, where you may be as fured! will exert my utmost Skill to dissipate the Vapour that disturbs your Brain.

P. S. Mr. Godeau advises the Cold Bath, and be that you'll drink no Tea. has good as The best of the cold base, and a best of the cold base, and a best of the cold base.

Tho' I promised a Description of the last Scene in which the good Father's Virtue was put to the severest Trial it ever met with, yet to paint it in natural Colours is a Task that I am not very fond of, for Reasons which I dare say my semale Readers will easily guess: I shall therefore only say that the lovely Miss Scarron got her Lesson from Madam Maintenon (the best School-mistress for the Art of Coquetry that France could ever boast of) and acced

1

1

3

d

acted her Part to the Life. Imagine you fee a Venus lying on a Couch at full Length in a fort of Undress which invited the curious Eye to gaze on Beauties—hang them I'll say no more about them—but only tell you that the poor Confessor stood like a Statue, and could not pronounce one single Word. Miss stretched out her beautiful Arm which unluckily happened to be uncovered, she sighed, looked languishing—dropt a tender Tear—He advanced—retired—looked silly—would have fain said an Ave, but had no Power;—well, what next—not at all what some may rashly imagine, for in the Twinkle of an Eye some invisible Power hurried him off the Stage.

O! Loyola, how well thou nicked the Time when thy frail Son was just upon the Brink of Perdition, and how justly did he annually perform a Neuvaine \* in Honour of this memorable Deliverance.

ŀ

e

n

fi

b

W

b

he

no

hi

fh

in

tu

fra

fu

THE King and Madam Maintenon laughed heartily at this Adventure, and tho' it had not altogether the Effect which that Lady proposed to herself, yet the fesuit was so ashamed of it, that he appeared seldomer at Court than before, and became a more gentle and indulgent Monitor.

THE Reader is now to remember that, for the future, I am Monsieur le Chevalier de Rad-

Coquetry that a same count ever bond off and

<sup>\*</sup> A nine Days Devotion,

pent, and at present lodged at the Hotel de Luines in St. German Suburbs, with my Maid
Lucy, whose travelling Name is Pelissier my
Valet de Chambre, and a hackney Footman
who knew so little of our Disguise that he
would at any Time have taken a solemn Oath
of our being real Men. The House where I
lodged was one of the best of what we call
Hotels garnis \* in Paris, and much frequented
by Strangers of Distinction.

THE Count de Saluce and his Lady from Auvergne had an Apartment in this House. I happened to meet this Gentleman pretty often either going out or coming in, and tho' we were entire Stangers to one another, a certain Simpathy, which can not be accounted for, made us salute as we passed in such a kind and friendly manner, that it was easy to judge we both earnestly desired a farther Acquaintance, which perhaps would not however have happened, had not Chance offered me a favourable Opportunity on coming out of the Playhouse.

THE Count could neither find his Coach nor any of his Footmen which made him and his Lady stop at the Door till some of them should appear; as I overheard him complaining of their Negligence, I took that Opportunity of offering him my Coach which he frankly accepted, telling me, in a very graceful Manner, that he was glad of this Accident, since

d

y

0

at le

or

d-

nt,

<sup>\*</sup> Furnished Lodgings for Strangers.

fince it procured him the Honour of my Acquaintance, and added, with a Smile, that he had been laying Schemes for some Days past how to accomplish what Chance and my Politeness had happily brought about. I answered his Compliment with an Assurance that we had perfectly simpathised in our Desires, and that mine appeared to be very strong since they had forced me to use a Freedom which I should not otherwise have taken: He then presented me to his Lady telling her I was the Gentleman who lodged in the same House with them, and whom he had so often mentioned to her.

I made a short Compliment to the Countess and then handed her to my Coach, in which her Husband and I placed ourselves with her, and drove streight to our Lodging, where I supped with them, and passed the Evening in a most agreeable Conversation; the Count being a Gentleman of great Merit, and his Lady a virtuous, sweet tempered, and beautiful Woman. In short, we became so intimate that from Morning to Night I was either in their Apartment, or abroad with them, and we went about a Month after our first Acquaintance to Fountainbleau together, where the Court then was, and where we remained during the whole Time of the King's Stay.

ŀ

V

te

F

A

b

W

S

m

A

I ought here, as a Traveller, to give a Defeription of that hunting Palace, which indeed is as fingular in its Fabrick, as in its Situation, and may be called an Edifice beautiful Palaces in France have been so often described already in Books to be found in every Bookfeller's Shop, that it would be trifling to repeat what every Mortal who has read any Travels, must know as well, if not better than I do my felf.

THE Court at that Time happened to be under strange Agitations, upon account of the Duke of Bourbon's Disgrace, brought about by the ancient Bishop of Frejus, afterwards Cardinal de Fleury, who had got fuch an Ascendant over the King by having been his Preceptor, that all the Duke and his Party's Efforts were not able to restore him to Favour; the cunning Priest stood his ground, became his Master's sole Adviser, and the Duke of Bourbon forbid to come to Court for near two Years. Frejus, 'tis true, had but too good a Handle to kick up the Prince's Heels, who was so far infatuated with Madam de Prie, as to oppress the Kingdom to satisfy her insatiable Avarice, and to make himself more odious still to the People than the Duke of Orleans, by Law's Missisppi System.

THE only good Thing that ever this debauched Woman did, so I think, tho' others will not agree with me, was the hand she had in bringing about the King's Marriage with Stanislaus's Daughter, in Opposition to the Orleans Family and the Spanish Faction; and my Reason for approving her Conduct in this Affair, proceeds rather from the good Effects

1

e

ı-

F 2

it has produced, than from the Motive which made her attempt it. Our excellent Queen proves a Bleffing to the Nation, tho' Madam de Prie designed her as a Curse; the clearing up of this would lead me into a Labyrinth, out of which I could not eafily draw myfelf; besides, I don't think it very necessary to trouble the Public with a long Narration of this Transaction, it being more properly the Business of an Historian: All I shall say is, that the Duke's Fall involving all his Creatures, and particularly this Lady, who was ordered to retire to her Husband's Country Seat in Normandy, all her Expectations were frustrated, which, with the Absence, and perhaps a little Infidelity in the Duke, foon ended her Days.

I had by this Time contracted fuch a Friend-Thip with the Count and his Lady, and they appeared to be so fond of me, that I could not think of fetting out upon my Travels while they remained at Paris; we were never feparate but while we were in Bed, and in the whole Course of my Life I never met with two People whom I half fo much efteemed. I hope this Declaration will ferve as an Apology for my entertaining my Readers, by way of a very long Digreffion, with the History of their Amours, which have fomething very fingular, and in my Opinion, very entertaining in them. The Count had taken the Pains to commit them to Paper, and what I relate is Word for Word from his Manuscript, which indeed has been published in France by what Acci-

I

b

C

1

ti

fi

g

fr

ir

N

li

Accident I know not, and passes with some for a Novel, tho' I have all the Reason in the World to believe that the Story in every Circumstance of it is literally true.

A Merchant of Lyons, named Dallon, who had acquired the Reputation of a Man just and honest in his Dealings, retiring home one Evening, was accosted by a Stranger, who begged in a melancholly submissive Tone, that he would grant him a Moment's Audience.

Dallon taking him for an indigent Person, pulled out of his Pocket some small Pieces of Silver to give him. But the Stranger looking at him with an Air of Assurance, told him he did not want Charity; and that, instead of asking, he had brought Money to offer him: I only beg, added he, that you may conduct me to a Place where we cannot be overheard. Dallon judging by his Discourse that there was some Mystery in this Assair, brought him into a Low Parlour of his House; and ordering his Servant to retire, desired he would speak his Mind freely.

e

h

1.

=

y

y

1-

13

is

h

at

1-

THE Stranger, who by his noble Air gave Dallon Ground to believe that he was a young Gentleman of Distinction, pulled from under a shabby Cloak a Sort of Maund in which was a young Child and a Bag of Money: Here's a thousand Pistols and a little Girl, said he, both which I have Orders

F 3

to leave with you; fome important Reafons oblige the Father and Mother of this Child to conceal its Birth for fome Years: Your Reputation of being a Man of Honour and Probity has engaged them to put so high a Confidence in you; the Thousand Pistols will defray all Expences for fome Time, and Care will be taken to retire her before this Sum is expended, or a new Fund lodged in your Hands, if the Parents should be obliged to keep her longer concealed. In the mean Time, they beg you'll give her Education fuitable to a Woman of Quality, and never give up your Charge but to the Person who shall present the other Half of this Letter, giving him a Piece of Paper cut in fuch a Manner that the Words had neither Sense nor Coherency, without adding the Half that was wanting.

Dallon was at a Loss what to think of this Adventure; and very unwilling to comply with the Request that was made him, reprefenting, by way of Excuse, that as the Child feemed to be at most but three or four Days old, he could eafily find a Nurse capable to take Care of it, and to keep the Secret; that she would be better concealed in the Hands of obscure Country People than with him; that being a Widower, and having only one Daughter about Two Years old, he could not eafily find any Pretence for his taking Care of this Child's Education, every body knowing that he had neither Neice nor Cousin, and therefore begged he would think of some other; but the young Gentleman used so many and strong Intreaties, not to throw the Parents into Despair by a Resusal, that he was at last prevailed upon; and taking the Child, the Money, and the Half of the Letter, by which she was to be known again, he assured him that he would make it his Endeavours to discharge himself with Integrity of the Trust reposed in him.

THE young Gentleman charmed with his Success, thanked him in Terms which made it plain that he had more than a common Regard for this little Girl; and tho' his Youth seemed to take off all Suspicion of his being the Father, yet Dallon concluded from his Behaviour that he was, and pressed him to tell the Truth.

You are not deceived in your Conjectures, replyed he fighing, this Child is dear to me; but though she is the Present of Love, she is not the Fruit of diforderly inconfiderate Youth, nor of an unlawful Commerce; her Mother is my Spouse; but as we are neither of us at Age to claim an Inheritance worth preserving, and that the Severity of our Parents makes us dread the Confequence of their Violence, we find ourselves forced to conceal our Marriage for some Time. I am very fenfible that I might have put my Daughter to Nurse in some Country Place, and had her brought up by a Peafant, who, from the large Allowance for her Main-

\$

C

h

13

y

1

k

Maintenance, might perhaps have been careful enough of her, but then she would have been brought up in a Clownish Manner, which determined me to address myself to you as a Man of an exceeding good Character, and distinguished in the Place where you live, and to whose Probity I might, safely trust this dear Pledge, leaving to your own Prudence and Discretion the Degree of Relation you think most proper to give her, and only recommending your giving her a genteel Education, and proper for the Child of Parents who hold a distinguished Rank in the World.

Dallon earnestly pressed him to make a sull Discovery of his Family and Birth; but he begged to be excused, and only promised that fix Months hence he would see him again; and then gave him with the half Letter a Billet, in which were these Words:

This Child is the first Fruits of a lawful Marriage, was regularly baptized, and named Sylvia.

Dallon, on his Part, affured him of the Care he would take of his Daughter; so that they parted very well pleased with one another.

THE Merchant was no fooner alone than he made an exact Search about the Child, to fee if he could any how unfold the Mystery of this Adventure; but all was lost Labour,

and

(

(

b

t

(

I

V

V

10

1

V

21

tl

Y

th

E

Y

and therefore he refolved to trouble himfelf no farther about Inquiries, but to do his Duty with respect to the Infant, whom, from a Motive of Compassion, joined to the Influence of the Thousand Pistols, he resolved to ferve as a Father, and with that View immediately fent for his Daughter's Nurse, and gave her the Child as his Niece, a Brother's Daughter who lived at Clermont in Auvergne, and whose Spouse having come to Lyons about Business, had lost her Life in bringing a dead Child in the Seventh Month to the World; but this Misfortune had been kept so secret that few People were as yet informed of it; fo that the Nurse had no Notion but that the Child, even when she heard of the Mother's Death, was his Niece; but what gave still a greater Appearance of Truth to this Story, was the Death of Dallon's Brother by an unfortunate Fall from his Horse, about three Week's after his Wife's Death; fo that Dallon, as this Child's Uncle and natural Tutor, publickly assumed the Title, so that the little Sylvia passed in an authentic Manner for his Niece, and was nurfed as fuch.

1

1

d.

t

d

THE fix Months not only expired, but several Years sollowed without the Father's appearing or any News from him. Nevertheless, Silvia having attained to her sourth Year. and the little Dallon to her Sixth, they were in the House together as Cousins, had the same Masters, and in short the same Education to their sisteenth and seventeenth Years.

THE two young Ladies had equally anfwered to his Care of their Improvement, by rendering themselves perfect in every Thing that was taught them, fuch as Musick, Dancing and Instruments. A tender and folid Friendship united them; and tho' Nature had not favoured Miss Dallon with the Charms of Beauty, which the young Silvia joined to her other Perfections, yet she was not in the least jealous or uneasy, nor Silvia in the least vain.

Ismena, the Name of the Merchant's Daughter, was not at all ugly but little; Silvia was tall, well shaped, and beautiful as an Angel. But Virtue, Wit, and Sweetness of Temper, had been shared between them with fo much Equality, that If the lovely Silvia might look upon her rare Qualities as an Addition to her Charms, the virtuous Ismena might find in hers what made Amends for the Loss of those external Accomplishments which attract the Eye. They loved one another with the most perfect Friendship; and, believing themselves to be really Coufins, made it an agreeable Law to fulfil the Duties which the Proximity of Blood requires in virtuous Minds.

THIS lovely Correspondence and Sympathy was for some Time agreeable to Dallon; he doated on his Daughter, and every Thing the loved being dear to him, he expressed such an Affection for Silvia as he could have had

y

n

a h H

VE

ar

m

h

Ш

h

W W

u

n

hig

nea

La

Be Rio for a real Niece. But as he felt a fecret Grief at her having the Advantage of Ismena in Beauty, and was apprehensive that, not-withstanding his Daughter's great Fortune, Silvia would be preferred to her by the Lovers who appeared, he often repented his having taken upon him the Charge of this young Girl.

EIGHTEEN Years having slipt away since she was under his Care, without any Person's appearing to inquire about her, he thought himself authorized to dispose of her; and therefore resolved to shut her up in a Convent, if he perceived that her Presence was any Hindrance to his Daughter's Establishment, which he soon found to be the Case.

•

1

n

e

.

e

.

y

ct

be

to

of

a-1;

ng

ch ad for THOUGH Dallon took Care that they should not see much Company, yet having allowed them to appear at some Assemblies, their Merit soon made a Noise, and the whole Conversation of Lyons was about the two Cousins. But though they rendered the Justice that was due to Ismena, all the Hearts in general declared for her Cousin, which so highly provoked Dallon, that he refused to hear of any Addresses to Silvia; the two Ladies soon penetrated into the Cause of his Behaviour, but were different in their Opinion of his Conduct.

allowing the Notion of the Necessity of my

Silvia, who placed Beauty in the Rank of Things upon which she put the least Value, and who really thought herfelf in nothing superior to her Friend, found that Dallon could not at all be blamed for defiring to have his Daughter married before his Niece, and protested that the greatest Grief he could give her would be to act otherwife.

Ismena, who was no less generous, and who knew all the Worth of her Coufin, could not bear the Thoughts of her Father's being liable to fuch a Weakness. It is impossible, my dear Silvia, said she one Day when they were upon this Subject, but that my Father's acting in this Manner, must make People imagine I am jealous of your Charms; and this, I believe you will allow, is fetting me in a ridiculous Light, a thousand times more capable to frighten Courtiers than my Ugliness. Let him, at least, give me the Satisfaction to make it appear, that if I do not refemble you in Beauty, I have the Happiness, at least, to do it in Character, which I shall prove by the Joy that your Marriage will give me; he even deceives himself, continued she, if he fancies by this Means to force Hearts to do me Homage; and I am perfuaded that it is his Interest as well as mine, allowing his Notion of the Necessity of my having a Husband, to get you bound by Hymen's

1

C

C

£

t

tl

ta

tl

th

le

tv

na

 $I_{I}$ 

de

ha

Hymen's Chain as foon as he can; for Men who are not meer Fortune-Hunters will never make their Addresses to me, while they have any Hopes of succeeding with you; but when you are once disposed of, I don't know but the Adorers may approach my Shrine.

No, my dear Ismena, answered Silvia, it is not natural that a Father should establish his Niece preferably to his Daughter; your Virtue, your Sentiments, and admirable Talents deserve the Attachment of every Man who has any Pretenfions to Sense or Reason; and I own that I am perfectly pleased with your Father's giving no Encouragement to my Admirers, having a very indifferent Opinion of Men, who, allowing themselves to be dazzled by vain Ornaments, only place their Happiness in ocular Satisfaction, without examining the Qualities of the Mind.

WERE those Gentlemen whom your Father admits into his House allowed a certain Time to be acquainted with us, before they made their Addresses, I am very certain that you would have the Preference, or, at least, that the Hearts would be divided between us; but that without the least Examination they should ask Silvia and neglect Ismena is what I cannot pardon, and what determines me to approve of my Uncle's Behaviour.

Vol. I.

ot

DU

us

to

et to

ble

at

all

vill

nti-

rce

er-

ine, my

by

nen's

G

Your

Humai's Chain as foon as he

1

a

t

F

to

a

he

L at

W DU

in

no

he ig

Da

ed rec

us 1 defi

Your Friendship for me blinds you, replied Miss Dallon; and mine for you, on the contrary, enlightens me. I will agree for a Moment to please you, that my Character, Humour and Sentiments, may, perhaps, render me worthy of a Gentleman's Addresses; but when with these internal Qualities he shall find Beauty and Charms, fuch as you posses, would it be surprizing that he should prefer them? No, no, my dear Silvia, I do myself Justice; I cannot blame the Men for thinking as they do: Were I in their Place I should do no less; and if my Father believes that his rejecting their Proposals for you will make them change the Object, he will know in the Sequel how much he bas been deceived.

AFFAIRS were in this Situation, when my Cousin the Marquis Dantin and I arrived at Lyons, we were both Lieutenants in the fame Regiment, he in the Twenty-fifth Year of his Age and I in my Twenty-fecond, for were obliged to come from Riom in Auvergne to Lyons, to terminate an Affair of Interest, in which both our Fathers, lately deceased, were equally concerned.

lears, that the Hearls would be diving an As the Cafe was about a confiderable Sum deposited in the Hands of Dallon's Brother, who died at Clerment, and of which we had heard nothing fince his Death, but that Dallon had taken Possession of all his Effects; the first Thing we did on our Arrival was to 0 go go to his House. It must be owned that he received us with Distinction; and our Claim being justified by the Vouchers which we produced, he promised, without the least Hesitation, to pay the Money in a Month's Time.

As we happened to please him mightily, and that by our Discourse he understood our Fortunes, though pretty tollerable, did not answer to our Birth, and were not sufficient to enable us to make a Figure in the military Prosession, he immediately formed a Project, to purchase with a large Fortune the Title of Marchioness or Countess to his Daughter, by a Marriage with one of us. With this View he pressed us so earnestly to take no other Lodging but his House, while we remained at Lyons, that we consented, hoping this would be a Means to hasten the Payment of our Money.

n

e

n

ed he

ar

fo

u-

of

ely

um

er,

had al-

ts;

go

THE Merchant, who did not penerate into the Motive of our Compliance, having no Notion of failing in the Execution of what he had promifed, thought himself highly obliged, and conducted us directly to his Daughter's Apartment, to whom he presented us as Persons of Merit and Distinction, recommending to her to assist him in thing us the Honours which Persons of our Quality deserved.

Ismena

and tent bereve and from Ismena was at that Time alone, and not penetrating into her Father's real Intentions, took what he faid upon the Footing of a Compliment usual upon such Occasions. As the spoke gracefully, and all her Actions were animated by the Liveliness of her Wit; the Delicacy of her Expressions, the Solidity of her Decisions, and the Charms of her Conversation ravished us, but my Cousin the Marquis had the good Fortune to please her more than I; whether it was that not being so young, she thought him more capable of a ferious Attachment, or that she really thought he had more Merit, I shall not determine; but this is certain, that she owned, when she came to be his Wife, that from the first Moment she found herfelf very much disposed to love him. Nevertheless, as she wanted that Silvia should be in every Respect as happy as herself, she earnestly wished that her Friend might entertain the same favourable Thoughts of me, as the herfelf had of my Coufin,

WHEN that charming Girl, who had no Notice given her of this Vifit, entered the Apartment, with a Design to reproach her gently for shutting herself up in her Chamber alone, sound her in so good Company, she said not a Word, and only saluted us with her usual Gracefulness, but with a Referve which the Presence of unknown Persons usually inspires.

Ismena.

t

2

t

£

h

lo

0

P

to

m

fat

Ismena, who perceived her Constraint, and who was fond that the should display all her Charms, prefented my Coufin and me to her, explaining the Subject of our Visit, and the Commands that she had received from her Silvia foon penetrated into his Defign, and opened not her Mouth but to extol every thing Ismena faid, that she might prepossess us with a favourable Opinion of her Cousin, and with an indifferent one of herfelf: But notwithstanding all her Efforts to make us believe ber a Girl of a weak Understanding, she could not hinder her first Glances from piercing, at the same Time, both our Hearts; but concealing what past in our Breasts, that we might not give Miss Dallon the Mortification of perceiving her Cousin's Triumph, and mutually to hide from one another our growing Passion, we continued the Conversation in the same free Manner that we had begun it.

0

t

d

ts

10

ne

er

ef

y,

us

e-

na

her at Liberty to make Observations, was not long before she discovered that her Coufin savoured the Marquis more than me; and owned to me afterwards that it gave her great Pleasure, finding herself very much disposed to have the same Inclination for me that Ifmena had for my Cousin.

WHILE we were thus engaged in Converfation, and affected a Tranquillity which we really had not, Dallon was giving Orders for

G 3

an

an elegant Entertainment, and afterwards, returned to his Daughter's Apartment. The gay Humour in which he found her, and the Seriousness he observed in Silvia's Countenance, giving him Ground to imagine that my Cousin and I had made our Court wholly to Ismena, and that Silvia's Reserve proceeded from Vexation; he selt a Pleasure in this Thought, which he could scarce conceal.

Word was at last brought that Dinner was upon the Table, where there was Plenty of good Dishes; but as I observed that every Time Silvia opened her Mouth to speak, Dallon commanded her to Silence, and obliged his Daughter to do the Honours of the Table; neither my Cousin nor I could relish what was presented to us.

I

F

in

to

C

hi

fu

E

Wa

TI Ch

in Ser

La

Miss Dallon, fadly vexed at her Father's Behaviour, and who wished that her Cousin should make a Conquest of my Heart, while she sought the Way to my Cousin's; made several Signs to her to take no Notice of her Father's Whims, and begged when the Desert was served that she would fing along with her: But Dallon interrupting her with an Air of Resentment; No, no, said he, sing alone, Silvia's Voice does not agree with yours; it is untuneable, and I want to hear you sing by yourself.

This disobliging Discourse put Ismena very much to the Blush, and searing that we might

might think she approved of it: I am extremely surprized, Sir, replyed she, that you render so little Justice to Silvia; no Body sings more justly, or more mothodically; her Voice is a great Deal sweeter than mine; and as I know that she lends me Graces which I am not Mistress of myself, you'll excuse me, I hope, from singing if you will not allow her to accompany me. My dear Ismena, answered Silvia smiling, don't let us be deprived of the Pleasure of hearing you for such a weak Obstacle; consider, that not being able to come up to the Idea which you have given of my Voice, you'll expose me more than my Uncle's unfavourable Judgment.

6

1

3

n

le

de

er

e-

th

an

ng

ith

ear

ena

weght

THIS Dispute, which plainly discovered the Modesty and Candour of the two young Ladies, charmed my Cousin and me; and tho' we could not love Ismena with the same Ardour as we did Silvia, yet we could not refuse her our Esteem; and both of us judging that the effectual Way to please her was to prevail with Dallon to confent to her Courn's finging along with her; we pressed him fo earnestly that he confented, and they fung together so exquisitely well that we were highly charmed, and gave deservedly equal Encomiums to both. But as Silvia's Beauty was much superior to her Cousin's, every Thing the did feemed to have particular Charms, fo that we fuck'd in Love's Poison in large Draughts; we concealed however our Sentiments fo carefully, and applauded the Ladies so equally, that Dallon imagined I mena

Ismena had made a Conquest of us both. As he had ordered our Equipages to be brought to his House, where he infifted on our taking up our Lodgings, we employed the remaining Part of the Day in different Walks. which affording us a favourable Opportunity of entertaining Silvia in our Turns, and of knowing all her Merit, we refolved each of us in private to ask her in Marriage.

THE two Ladies having mutually communicated their Thoughts of the Marquis and me, were extremely pleafed to find that their Hearts had fixed on different Objects. 1/mena flattered herself that the had pleased the Marquis, and Silvia fancied that the had read in my Looks a Part of the Sentiments with which she had inspired me. As we were intirely our own Mafters, Dantin having neither Father nor Mother, and I only a Motherin-law, to whom I was in no manner fubjected, we made no doubt but Dallon would willingly give his Daughter to one of us, and his Niece to the other; we carefully however concealed our Defigns from one another. each of us fearing to meet with Opposition from the other for intending to marry a Woman so inferior to us in birth.

THE Time of the Reimbursement approaching, both of us refolved to declare ourfelves, accordingly I went one Morning early to Dallon's Apartment, whom finding alone, I addressed my felf to him in the following Manner: I can not express, faid I, the Joy

is

2

fe

E

im ter

as :

of a

ten

Wit

ple

of t

which your Acquaintance gives me, and how much I am fensible of the obliging Manner in which you have received my Cousin and me; it will always be fresh in my Memory, and I should esteem it a very great Happiness to have it in my Power to acknowledge your Favours by a suitable Return. Dallon answered that he had only done his Duty, and wished for an Opportunity of giving more essential Proofs of the Respect and Esteem he had for us.

As for Refpect, replied I, embracing him, let us wave that, but for Esteem, if it be true that you have it, give me leave to put you to a Trial. I adore your charming Niece, my Happiness depends upon her Possession, and consequently upon you, as she is wholly under your Direction. Perhaps you will not think my Fortune answerable to what I am told she is to inherit from her Family, but as I spring from a Race of illustrious Ancestors, and have a tolerable Estate, I dare hope for your Confent to my entering into your Alliance by a Marriage with Silvia.

.

)-

ld

10

V-

r,

0-

ur-

rly

ne,

ing

Toy

ich

Dallon was strangely disappointed in his Expectation, having on my first Compliment imagined that I had Designs upon his Daughter, and he could not constrain himself so far as not to let his Trouble appear at the Name of Silvia, by a visible Alteration in his Countenance: I know my felf too well, said he, with a Concern which plainly marked the Perplexity of his Mind, not to be highly sensible of the Honour that my Family must receive from

from an Alliance with yours, and I shall own that I would purchase it at the Expence of my whole Fortune if it were necessary, but it is not in my Power to attain to it in the Manner you propose.

THIS Silvia, whom you believe to be my Niece, is no Relation of mine; I am ignorant to what Country she belongs, or who gave her Birth; in one word, the was a Child whom I took out of Pity a few Days after her Birth, and whom I have brought up as my Niece, in hopes that her Parents would come and reclaim her, as a Stranger, who put her in my Hands, promised about nineteen Years fince; but as I have kept her long enough without any Person's appearing, and that it is not natural I should give to Strangers any Part of a Fortune to which my Daughter has a just Title as Heirefs, I am obliged to declare the Truth, and therefore, Sir, continued he, you plainly fee that this Match is not fuitable, and that I am no ways concerned in the Honour which you defigned me; but to give you a convincing Proof of the fincere Defire I should have of forming indiffoluble Ties with you, I offer you Ismena with a Portion of a hundred thousand Crowns independent of as much after my Death.

1

1

f

f

AI

ti

P

th cl

Si

m

pro

ge: fen

of

Bir

Ot

box

I am obliged to you, answered I, greatly afflicted at what I heard. I render the Justice that is due to Ismena's Merit, but the more I know her Worth, the more I think she deserves to have the entire Possession of a Heart;

Heart; mine is no more at my Disposal, the fatal Dart that pierced it has rendered the Wound incurable: Love, my dear Dallon, is not a Passion which is formed and laid aside at Pleasure, and it gives me very great Concern; but Silvia has made a Conquest of my Heart, and I find that I must love her to the Hour of my Death.

As Dallon's Design in revealing Silvia's Story was to discourage me from marrying that beautiful Maid, and to let me know that he would not authorise her Marriage with me, lest she should have a Rank superior to his Daughter; he answered coldly, that he was forry I had conceived so sudden an Inclination for a Girl no ways proper for me, since by all Appearance her Birth was as mean as dubious. I could no longer bear this cruel Conversation, but retired in a Condition that deserved Pity, and shut myself up in my Chamber to think without Interruption upon this melancholy Adventure.

t

e

u

d

ır

a ld

I

ed if-

tly

the

the

ink

of a

My first Ressections ran upon abandoning Silvia, and to seek in Absence the Cure of my Distemper; but this Thought, which proceeded from the Fear of having made a Choice unworthy of me, soon yielded to more generous Sentiments, and my Passion representing this beautiful Maid with all her Charms of Body and Mind, the Reasons of Rank, of Birth, and of Interest, appeared to be so weak Obstacles, and what she inspired so much above them, that I was assumed to have once thought

thought of them. What Obligation, faid I within myself, would Silvia have to me to adore her, and to wish to be her Husband, if her Birth were equal to her Beauty? were it fo, to what Rank might she not pretend? Could I flatter myself that she would be fatisfied with mine? What, continued I, are not Beauty, Wit, and Modesty, Titles a thoufand times more preferable than those of Nobility, which we owe to the Caprice of Fortune? What do I fay, was not I willing to unite my Destiny to Silvia, Niece of the Merchant Dallon? Did that Name place her above what she is at present? Did not I intend to nobilitate her by becoming her Hufband? Has she lost any of her Charms for fpringing from unknown Parents? Has my Passion taken its Birth from the Nobleness of her Blood? Are not her Charms the only Source, and are they not sufficient to constitute my Happiness? This Reflection flattered my Passion too much not to comply with it -Silvia without Birth became more dear to me than before; full of Indignation at the Injustice of Fortune, my Thoughts were wholly taken up upon repairing it, by sharing what had with her; and being refolved not to delay acquainting her with my Love and honourable Intentions, I went to Ismena's A partment, hoping to find a favourable Opportunity of entertaining her.

DURING these Resections in which I was wrapt up for a considerable Time, several Things had happened. I had scarce lest Dal-

lon's

t

u

n

n

d

n

m

II N

fic

to

uр

re

Lo

on.

hap

to y

inu ide:

Fav

ceal hope

my his S lon's Apartment when my Coufin Dantin prefented himfelf, and demanded Silvia in Marriage. Dallon almost in a Fury to see two Men, to whom he had not been so civil but with a Defign that one of them should marry his Daughter, make their Addresses to his pretended Niece, answered him in a very dry Manner, that he was not Silvia's Uncle; that she was a Foundling whom he had brought up out of Pity, of which he had but a Moment before informed his Coufin, who had made the same Demand; that he would not deceive, nor draw upon himself the Resentment of our Families, by concurring in our making an Alliance fo disproportioned and unequal. Dantin was no less struck wirh this News than I had been; but whether his Paffion was not so violent, or that his Affection to me made him apprehensive of a Quarrel upon account of this Rivalship, he resolved from that very Moment to furmount his Love.

ly

ed

t:

In-

olly

at I

de

ho-

A.

por-

Was

veral

Dal-Ion's I am very much concerned, said he to Dallon, for Silvia's Missortune; she deserved a happier Fate; nevertheless, since she is nothing to you, and that we are at Freedom to continue or abandon our Pretensions, I will consider on what is proper for me to do; all the Favour that I would desire of you is to conceal from the Count that I am his Rival; I hope I shall not long be so, at least, I will do my Endeavours; but as I am a Stranger to his Sentiments, and resolved to know them in Vol. I.

order to regulate my own, I should be glad that he knew nothing of this Conversation.

I

h

i

F

F

A

N

PI

P

Ι

P

T

ca

VO

lon

rup

the

the

via

Tr

wa

cru

to I

felf

wh:

Dallon, who had formed his Plan, promifed Secrefy, and when the Marquis was gone, ordered Ismena and Silvia to attend him in his Closet: Silvia, faid he to that charming Girl, I can not possibly conceal any longer a Secret which I have kept while I thought it might be useful to you, without Prejudice to myself; but now as I fee it to be of the greatest Consequence to my Daughter and to me, I am obliged to declare that you are not my Niece; that I am ignorant to whom you owe your Birth, and that you have no Right to my Brother's Succession. Then without mentioning any thing of the young Gentleman who had committed her to his Care, nor of the thousand Pistoles he had received from him, he only told simply that a Person very indifferently dreffed had intreated him on his Knees to give her out to nurse, promising to retire her in fix Months, and begged that he would not deliver her but to the Person who should present the Half of a Letter which he left with him. Nevertheless, continued he, I have for eighteen Years past taken care of you without any Person's appearing, which makes me naturally conclude that my Compassion has brought me into this Scrape, and that you owe your Birth to poor People, who not being in a Condition to entertain you, have made use of this Stratagem to procure you Subfistance; and that being dead perhaps by Want and Mifery, or in foreign Countries, they they have abandoned you to what Fortune pleased to make of you. You know, added he, what I have done for you, and in what Manner I have brought you up, of which I don't repent, fince you have answered to my Endeavours, by your Sweetness of Temper, Modesty, and Attachment to Ismena; and it is with the Intention of rewarding them, that I am refolved to put you in a Condition of having no Dependance on the World, by making you a Nun. As it is the only reasonable Resource in your present Situation, without Fortune, without Parents, and deprived of all Affistance, I shall conduct you to a Convent where your Voice and musical Talents will procure you Admission, without the usual Portion; and to continue the Charity which I have all along exercised, I will settle a small Pension on you for providing, from Time to Time, some Necessaries that you'll have occasion for; and this is all I can possibly do, or you reasonably expect.

Dallon might have continued to speak as long as he pleased, without the least Interruption from either of the two young Ladies, their Astonishment and Grief not permitting them to open their Mouths. However, Silvia making a strong Effort to conceal the Trouble with which she was agitated; tho' I was far from expecting, said she to him, the cruel Change which you have now declared to me, and that as your Niece I thought myself under strong Obligations to you, yet by what I now learn, they are so far augmented H 2

n

h

d

re

h

n-

nd

ho

u,

ire

ars

ies,

hey

that I can find no Terms proper to express my Gratitude. I shall not pretend to disguise the Concern which this Overthrow of my Fortune gives me; not that Ambition has any Part in my Grief, the Regret only of not knowing who I am, occasions my Pain; and I would rather owe my Origin to the lowest Class of Mortals, than to be under so melancholy an Uncertainty: But since I must submit to my rigorous Fate, and separate myself for ever from Ismena, I accept, without Hesitation, of your generous Offer, by which I shall have the Satisfaction of concealing from the World the Shame of my unhappy Destiny.

b

e

n

W

lo

ge

ric

m

hi

6l

Ho

foli

ma

Co

Libi

ar

oll

ilv

e ti

nd

er

WHAT! my dear Silvia, cried Ismena, all in Tears, will you then have the Cruelty to leave me? O! Sir, said she to her Father, can you think of dragging her from my Arms? Ought you to have united us by so persect a Friendship, to separate us hereafter with fo much Rigour? What matters it whether she be my Kinswoman or not! Is the not still my Friend? Am not I rich enough to supply the Place of those who have abandoned her, and are not you fo too to ferve her as a Father? Can you with any Justice dispose of a Will over which you have no other Authority but what Gratitude requires of her? Ah! Sir, continued she, throwing herfelf at his Feet, it is on my Knees that I ask you Silvia, don't force her from me, or fuffer that the same Cloister may inclose us both. Generous Ismena, interrupted Silvia, with Eyes drowned in Tears, don't shake my Con-

Constancy by these tender Marks of your Friendship, and be affored that there is nothing fo cruel to me as a Separation from you; but confider that I can no longer appear in the World with Honour; that having been educated and known as Niece to your Father, and Heiress to his Brother, I shall become an Object of Contempt, when the Public shall be informed of my fatal Adventure: Whoever I may be, Heaven has given me Sentiments too high to live under the Humiliation which is fit for my present Condition, and I look upon it as a special Happiness that your generous Father is inspired with a Design of kreening me from the Town-talk, and the ridiculous Light in which my unhappy Case must set me.

Dallon, who had no fuch delicate way of hinking as the two Ladies, and who was abolutely determined to have Silvia out of his House, highly extolled her Courage and Refolution; and ordering Ismena, who still renained at his Feet, to get up, he laid his Commands on her with great Severity, to abmit without murmuring to his Will; but ar from being discouraged, she renewed her follicitations with fo much Earnestness, that ilvia fearing her Presence and Tears might e the Cause, withdrew, to leave Dallon at liberty to explain himfelf with his Daughter, nd to be at Freedom herself to complain of er unhappy Fate. Savol yen sinsulfus

y

y us

t-

t

ch

ve

rve

ice

no ires

ing

it I

or

us via,

my on-

10121

eA cut full fee the gettes caryone Check

off the half but thell an

As she was going into Ismena's Apartment I met her, being come there with a Design to find her out. Her Eyes were bathed in Tears, and Melancholly was visibly painted in mine. We soon perceived our mutual Grief, and saluted one another without being able to pronounce one single Word; I presented my Hand to her, trembling; and she gave me her's almost under the same Concern; and in this silent Manner we went into Miss Dallon's Closet, where Silvia threw herself into an Arm Chair, and I upon my Knees before her.

ì

li

n

acti

m

de

ha

or bu

G

D

E

yo th:

bh

This Posture of mine made her recover herfelf; and blushing when she looked at What do you mean Count, faid she! Does your Distraction make you forget that I am Silvia? I am under no Absence of Mind, answered I, I adore you, and I am come to declare it; but as my Esteem equal my Love, my Words shall prove my Resped while I endeavour to express the Ardour of my Flame. This Declaration furprizes you, and appears no doubt rash and bold, continued I, observing her to change Colour: Nevertheless, I hope you will not think it fo culpable, when you know that it is not my Fault, if you was not informed by him from whom I thought you was to be obtained; but his Retufal, founded on a Pretence which only augments my Love, forces me to offer you my Heart and Hand. The Tears, of which I still see the Traces on your Cheeks, inform inform me that he has discovered to you the Secret of your Birth; but as I prefume he has not at the same Time informed you of the Sentimen:s with which you have inspired me, my Mouth must be the Interpreter: Yes, charming Silvia, you fee in me the most passionate of all Lovers who aspires to the glorious Title of Husband. Permit me to repair the Injustice of Fate, by sharing my Fortune with you; and let my Love and my Name serve you instead of Portion and Parents. I am my own Master, Dallon is not yours; and nothing can oppose my Felicity. unless by an Effect of my Misfortune you have contracted a Hatred for the most amorous Man in the World.

ıt

at

of

m

ak

ed

of

ou.

iti-

11:

fo

my

om

but

nich

ffer

, 01

eks, orm

AH! good God, cried the lovely Silvia. lifting up her Eyes to Heaven, was not my Fate rigorous enough, without joining this new Subject of Grief. Generous Count. added the with a foft kind Glance, I know all the Value of the Advantages which you offer me; they even make me fenfibly feel the Weight of my Misfortune; and I will freely declare to you, that were I born a Queen and had a Crown to bestow, you should be the only Person on whose Head I would place it; but the dearer you are to me, the more your Glory is precious in my Eyes: Niece to Dallen and fole Heiress to a considerable Estate, I found myself still so far beneath you, that I fcarce durft allow myfelf to think that you would stoop so low as me, and I blushed when your Looks seemed to flatter

Judge now of my Sentiments, possesfing nothing of what might in some Measure justify your Choice. I know that Love renders all its Vassals equal, that it has often united the Scepter and the Sheep-hook, but they who made fuch odd Matches knew at least their Origin; the Shepherdess knew that she was born such, and the Purity of the Blood which ran in her Veins might in some Measure make Amends for the Want of Rank and Fortune; but for me, of what can I boaft, ignorant how or from whence I came; if I owe my Birth to the Effects of a criminal or virtuous Love, or if the Obfcurity of my Birth be the greatest Failing of those who were the Authors of it.

AH! Count, this Idea alone makes me tremble; what would be my Despair, if having honoured me with your Name, fome Time or other, the Authors of my Life should be discovered; and that upon Information of my Origin, Subjects of Shame were found in it for exceeding its Meannefs. No. I shall not expose you to fuch terrible Events; fatisfied with the Glory of having pleased you, and that you did me the Honour of offering me your Hand, which, as I cannot deferve by the Advantages of those who may pretend to it, I shall endeavour by my Sentiments to preferve your Esteem; and since it is impossible that I can be the Count de Saluce's, no other shall ever possess me, and I said the the you would theop to low us me, and I

luked when your Looks formed to flitter

b

m

ru

ha

h vi

OI

ro

bec Do

kn

GI

wil

no

acı

tha

AH! too charming Silvia, cryed I, transported with Love and Admiration, what Fortune, what Rank, and what Renown are comparable to the Beauty of your Character; and should not I be the most unworthy Man living to prefer any Consideration to the Perfections of your Mind? My dear Silvia, continued I, fince I have the Happiness to find that you don't despise my Love, let me beg of you not to reject the Testimonies of it. and confider that it is figning the Sentence of my Death to oppose the only Thing that can render my Life happy. I have told you already that I am my own Master, and that my Family has no Right to controul my Actions, and I can - No, Count, interrupted she, you can do nothing; you may have it in your Power to make a worthy Choice; but when the Question is, where her you shall wed a Girl without Name. without Fortune, and without Birth, Reaon must be your Master. Your Family, rom which you have nothing to fear, because you do nothing that may give them Occasion of Complaint, will no sooner know the Injustice which you do to your Glory, than they will join to oppose you: I will become the Object of their Resentment, ind you would have the Grief of feeing me acrificed to it.

ł f

t

t

d

d

9

y

to

to

1-5,

11

As the pronounced these Words Ismena entered, but under fuch a terrible Trouble that she did not at first perceive me, and throwing throwing herfelf into Silvia's Arms; my dear Friend, faid she, I have gained no Ground, my Father is inflexible.

As I judged by these few Words that fomething was in Agitation, of which I was ignorant and greatly alarmed, I conjured her to tell me what was the Matter; but Silvia, who was resolved to conceal her Departure from me, prevented Ismena's Answer, by telling me that this tender Friend had left nothing unattempted to oblige her Father not to discover the Secret of her Birth, but to own her still as his Niece; and that the Excess of her Grief only proceeded from her not being able to prevail with him; and as she was defirous to be alone with Miss Dallon, she begged that I would retire, promising to come to no Resolution without first acquainting me. As I flattered myself that I would a last get the better of her Scruples, and being afraid that to speak of my Love before Isme na would not be agreeable to her, I obeyed her Commands, begging the would remember that I had still many important Things to tell her.

Silvia could not fee me go without Trouble; my Procedure, which she thought generous, joined to the fecret Inclination the had felt upon our first Interview, made an absolute Conquest of her Heart; and perfuaded that she was upon the Point of being for ever separated from me, she had not Power to prevent her Tears from burfting

a

te V

fo

b

y

CI

he

the

u.

f

Im

r:

Co

ny

ror

ah

hat

hi

Die

one ft ]

ever.

hic

Inten

M

rien

unity

out with a Violence that surprized Ismena, still the more as she had not found her so much affected at the Change of her Fortune as she could have wished; she embraced her tenderly, and mingling her Tears with hers: My dear Silvia, said she, you are then under some Concern at the Thoughts of leaving me, but, continued she with Vivacity, why don't you oppose my Father's Project, since he is nothing to you you owe him no Obedience?

I owe him every Thing, replied Silvia, he has nourished and brought me up; and the Education which he has given me requires that I should be as obedient to him as If he were my own Father: But my dear Ismena you don't know all my Misfortunes. Though Dallon were not to put me into a Convent, I should be obliged to go and hide myself in the remotest Part of some Defart from the whole World. I love the Count de aluce. and he is passionately fond of me; so that I cannot too foon avoid the Danger which we both of us run in following the Dictates of our Hearts. I must therefore be one, I must take the Benefit of your Father's aft Favour; and by shutting myself up for ever, preserve the Count from the Shame which would foon be the Consequence of his intended Project.

e.

ed

19(

ell

out

ght The

an per•

eing

not

ting

out

Miss Dallon extremely surprised that her friend should refuse so favourable an Opportunity of repairing her Missortune, since she confessed

# 

#### Half of a LETTER.

THE

1

0

n o re

WH

tii Na

an th

T

be

Fr

of.

you

I

tion

Te

the

an .

THE reading of this Letter threw Silvia into a long and deep Thoughtfulness; but at length awaking, as it were out of her Dream, and looking mournfully at Ismena: All this proves nothing, faid she, and People are but too well acquainted with the Tricks of thofe who feek to get rid of the Burthen of their Children's Intertainment and Education, to make any certain Judgment from fuch a Writing as this: Mifery often sharpens Invention, and this Billet is, no doubt, a Bait laid to oblige your Father to take Care of me; they probably imagined that the mysterious Manner in which it was written would make him believe that I belonged to Persons of Note, and that he would be handsomely rewarded for his Trouble and Care; but whatever may be in it, my dear Ismena, my Honour and Peace of Mind force me to retire: I dread the Shame and Ridicule constantly attached to Adventures of this Kind, and the Count de Saluce is too dear to me to think of exposing him to a Share of them: Therefore the only Favour which I would beg of you, as the strongest Proof of your Friendship, is to conceal from him the Place of my Retreat, if it should happen to come to your Knowledge.

Miss Dallon, terribly grieved at the Resolution of her Friend, reiterated her Prayers and Tears, to engage her at least to give her Father the Slip by retiring immediately, with an Assurance that she would take Care to Vol I.

inds

THE

provide her with the Necessaries of Life; but all to no Purpose: She looked upon such a Step as a fort of Treachery to her Benefactor. who was refolved to crown his Generofity by placing her in a Convent; the only Resource for one in her unhappy Situation; for which Reason, notwithstanding her natural Aversion to the Cloister, joined to the Inclination which she had for the Count, she was unalterably resolved to give a blind Obedience to Dallen's Will and Pleafure.

(

b

tl

H

OL

D

cu

th

ter

A

ftr

Bir

fec

bat

Lo

we

her

who

twe

THE melancholy Ismena perceiving that there was no Possibility of altering her Mind, and that there was a Necessity of confenting to this dreadful Separation, refolved to provide every Thing that was necessary for her in the Convent, and to put her in a Condition to leave it if she happened not to like it. With this View she forced her to accept of the best Part of her Jewels, and all the Money which she had, and not being able to beat it out of her Thoughts but that the half Letter would be some Time or other useful, she inclosed it in a little Satchel of Silk fastened to the Ends of a Ribbon she wore about her Neck, and which hung down in her Bosom, in a manner not to be feen, and earnestly recommended to her never to part with it; this Silvia promised, tho' she had no Hopes of its Utility.

WHILE the two Ladies were thus employed, Dallon, who resolved to get rid of us as foon as possible, since neither of us inclines clined to be his Son-in-law, was counting out our Money, and being informed that we were in our Apartments, sent a Servant to intreat that we would take the Trouble of coming to him in his Closet; which making us conclude, each within himself, that he had changed his Mind, we obeyed the Call with equal Ardour, but all our Hopes were dashed when Dallon shewed us the Money ranked in Order upon the Table, and with an Air of Coldness, thanked us for the Honour we had done him in lodging at his House; making broad Hints that our Money being paid, nothing more detained us at Lyons.

WE easily understood this Language, and as there was no thinking of staying at a Man's House against his Will, we resolved to change our Lodgings that very Day, which gave Dallon fo much Joy that he made no Difficulty of permitting us to take leave of Ismena; this we both asked but with different Intentions, for my Cousin's were to make his Addresses to Miss Dallon, since he found too strong Obstacles from the Obscurity of Silvia's Birth, and a Competition with me, to profecute his first Design; and mine were to combat her Scruples with all the Eloquence that Love is capable of.

t.

of

)•

t-

ne

ed

er

m,

tly

t;

of

m-

us

in-

ned

WHEN we entered Ismena's Apartment, we found her alone, Silvia having retired to her Closet to write. My Cousin was the first who spoke, and told her what had passed between Dallen and us in so mournful a manner,

12

that she could not conceal her Surprise and Grief; and looking at him with Eyes that discovered a Part of her Secret; this Day, said she, is marked out for the most unlucky of my Life, and my Father has, no doubt, resolved to make it odious to me.

I should think myfelf extremely happy, anfwered he, could the Offer of my Service be acceptable; in that case, I would endeavour to prevail with your Father to allow me to remain some Time about your Person. Silvia appeared as he had pronounced these Words, and as I perceived that the Marquis and Dallon's Daughter were like to be engaged in a Conversation that was not indifferent, I took this Opportunity of leading Silvia to a Window at a little Distance, and informed her of the Necessity I was under, not only of leaving Dallon's House, but also to return to Auvergne, where my Prefence was necessary upon Business of Importance; proposing to conduct her there, and to procure her in the Countess, my Mother-in-law, a Friend as tender and affectionate as Miss Dallon; Madam de Saluce, added I, is of a diftinguished Piety, her greatest Pleasure is in affisting unhappy Persons; she esteems me, and I have the same Regard and Respect for her as if she were my own Mother: I will declare my Passion to her, make her sensible how deserving you are of my Choice, which will, I am certain, gain her Approbation, and prevail with you to make me happy.

11

fe

C

h

th

of

tu

Si

pai ke

gei

the

Me

He

fon

Bur Silvia, whose Virtue was alarmed at the least Appearance of Irregularity, preferring her Obscurity to the Splendor of a Rank which was not to be purchased but by running away with a Man, rejected the Proposal without the least Hesitation; and tho' she did not deny but that she would think herself happy to be united to me by indiffoluble Ties, she nevertheless withstood the Bent of her Heart, and was so far Mistress as to refist the Pleasure of giving way to it; but being apprehensive of my taking some violent Resolution, she begged I would expect, from Time and her Perseverance, some favourable Change, infinuating that Dallon would perhaps take another Thought, and that she flattered herfelf Providence would some Way or other clear up the Mystery of her Birth: Thus by her Wit and Sweetness I was quite disarmed, and forced to submit to what she defired.

.

1.

ry to

he

25

2-

ed

n-

ve

he

my

rv-

am

vail

UT

On the other Hand, Miss Dallon vexed at the unguarded Expression which had slipt out of her Mouth upon what Dantin had told her. affected a greater Reserve than at first, and turning the Conversation upon the Fate of Silvia, without informing him of her Departure, which she had solemnly promised to keep a Secret; she displayed such noble and generous Sentiments, fo rare in her Sex when the Case is to do justice to the Beauty and Merit of another, that Esteem taking in his Heart the Place which Love for Silvia had some Moments before possessed, he was fully

13

perfuaded that he could not miss of being extremely happy with a Person of her Character. and as it was certain that this Match would procure him an Opulency which his own Fortune could not afford, he refolved from that Moment to turn his Thoughts wholly towards Ismena, and not to leave Lyons till he carried her along with him as his Wife; but being willing also to render me Service, and flattering himfelf that Dallon, upon Account of his Marriage with his Daughter, would refuse him no Favour, he resolved to make it one of his Demands that Miss Dallon, when he was married to her, should have the Difpofal of Silvia, and even carry her along with her to Auvergne. Full of this notable Scheme, he affured Ismena of the Part he took in her Friend's Misfortune, which he hoped might still be repaired, if a Project which he had in View succeeded to his Wishes; but, lovely Ismena, added he, in order to bring it to a happy Conclusion, you must accept of the Vows and Wishes of a Man whom you have for ever subjected, and consent to my addresfing your Father in quality of one who places all his Felicity in the Possession of your Heart and Person.

Ismena could not hear with Indifference the Marquis's Project of making her his Wife, but did not conceive how her private Happiness could make any Alteration in Silvia's Case. Tho' I am not ambitious, answered the, blushing, I think it would scarce to pardonable in me to reject the Honour you in

tend

t

i

n

I

ra

0

fo

N.

WH

W

Sil

an

as pre

bei

tend to do me, and my Happiness would be perfect if the Consent which you desire could contribute to that of my Friend. Dantin, charmed with this Declaration, returned thanks with Transport, and protested so strongly and so considently that he would change Silvia's Fortune, that Ismena was almost persuaded of it: She begged however to know upon what Foundation he gave her so agreeable Hopes; but the Marquis, who resolved to have the Pleasure of giving me an agreeable Surprise, begged she would allow him to be silent till he had spoken to her Father, and that she would mention nothing of it to her Friend.

Ismena, unwilling to press him farther, promised what he desired, upon which, Silvia and I joining them, the Conversation became general; but as Silvia and I were both under a Load of Melancholy which tied up our Tongues, I foon took my leave of the Ladies, and the Marquis followed my Example, with a Defign to speak to Dallon before Night; and as we could by no means stay longer in a Man's House who had paid us such a Compliment, we went directly and took Lodgings.

Dallon being suspicious that our Passion for Silvia would not allow us to leave Lyons soon, and dreading the Charms of this Girl as well as the Tears of his Daughter, hastened to prepare every Thing for her leaving Lyons the very next Day, having resolved to conduct her to a Convent near St. Flour in Auvergne,

ce

fe,

pi-

a's

red

ar-

in-

end

of which a Relation of his was Priores; he had kept his Defign a profound Secret both from Silvia and Ismena, that we might not endeavour to prevent it, and to avoid meeting with us at his own House, he went out the Moment he had paid the Money, leaving word that he was to fup abroad.

THIS obliged the Marquis to defer the Conversation he intended to have with him, till next Day, but he was again disappointed. for Dallon no sooner returned to his House than he ordered Silvia to make ready for her Departure at the Break of Day. Tho' this fudden Resolution surprised and afflicted her very much, yet she submitted to it without murmuring, and, notwithstanding Ismena's Tears and her own Grief, employed the whole Night in packing up and preparing for this melancholy Journey.

SHE wrote me a Letter which she begged Miss Dallon would deliver; this dear and tender Friend was under a heavy Load of Grief, the more insupportable as she had flattered herself with Hopes of a Turn in Silvia's Affairs, which now vanished by her Father's cruel Precipitation. She used all Endeavours to know the Name of the Convent where he intended to put her, with a Defign to inform me, the' fhe had promifed otherwife to Silvia; but Dallon put it out of her Power to break her Word, having absolutely refused to tell her the Place.

k

af

th

C

A

rej

he

eve

bei

fhe

qui

In fine, the fatal Moment came, and the two lovely Friends had almost sunk down when they were locked in one another's Arms, at the Thoughts of this cruel Separation. Any other but Dallon would have been penetrated with such a moving Sight; but he, far from being affected, pulled them forcibly from one another, and made Silvia get into a travelling Coach, placing himself at her Side, and ordering the Coachman to march, after having left Ismena under the Tuition of an old House-keeper, in whom he placed the greatest Considence.

Dallon took a round-about Way to St. Flour, not judging the common Road, fafe, left he should have been followed by my Cousin and me when we came to know of his carrying off Silvia. A gloomy Silence reigned between him and her, as she afterwards told me, during the whole Journey; and it was only within a few Miles of the Village in which was his Kinswoman's Convent, that he informed her they were in Auvergne, and not far from St. Flour.

d

)f

-

3

28

rs

m

ia;

ak

ell

IN

Silvia spoke not a Word, but inwardly rejoiced that she was to pass the Remainder of her Days in the Country where I lived; she even became less melancholy, and without being able to account for this Change, since she had no Intention to inform me where she was; she found her Mind in so sweet a Tranquillity, that she entered her Prison with a Satis-

As Dallon had been long thinking how to get rid of her, and had written several Letters to the Prioress his Relation, that Lady expected them, and seemed to be charmed with Silvia, to whom she greatly magnified the Agreeableness and Advantages of a religious Life. Silvia approved every thing she said, and expressed so little Repugnance to her being shut up, that Dallon made no doubt of her making a very good Nun. After a private Conference with the Prioress, in which they agreed upon their Terms, he took his Leave of Silvia without any seeming Concern, and immediately set out for Lyons.

THOSE whom Silvia had left were not so resigned as she: For my own Part, as I thought all the Moments lost which I passed without seeing her, I waited with great Impatience the Hour in which I might with Decency go to Dallon's House.

My Cousin Dantin full of his new Project got up very early, with an Intention to put it in Excecution; but how great was his Surprize when he understood by Dallon's Servants that their Master was gone with Silvia at the Break of Day, without leaving any Word where he intended, nor when he would return.

THOUGH

a

j

a

I

th

ed

he

me

fo

my

ly

my

the

kno forc

und

pref

1

to F

no lo

plied

on.

Though he had by this Time got the better of his first Passion, and was fully resolved to make Ismena and his Fortune the only Objects of his Desires, yet he was extremely concerned at that beautiful Maid's unhappy Fate, which he was sure would make me in a Manner desperate, and greatly afflict Ismena; so that all these Considerations joined together drew Sighs from his Heart, and Tears from his Eyes.

As it was too early to think of vifiting Mifs Dallon, he returned home; and being told that I was got out of Bed, came into my Chamber, but with a Countenance fo changed that I imagined he was very ill; or had heard fome disagreeable News; which made me ask him very abruptly what was the Matter, and what had obliged him to go abroad fo early: I have fo many Things to tell you, my dear Count, answered he in a melancholly Tone, that I don't know how to explain myself; I could wish you were ignorant of them, and yet I think it is necessary that you know them; would to God I could afford a Remedy to the Evil. In short, I am under a Perplexity which no Words can express.

1

ut

is 2's

th

ng

he

GH

This Discourse made me shake from Head to Foot, and I begged he would keep me no longer in Suspense. You love Silvia, replied he, you asked her in Marriage from Dallon. The Mistery you made of your Love,

and the Error I was under as well as you that the was his Niece, giving me Ground to hope that nothing would oppose my Wishes, I made no Attempt to withftand the Power of her Charms; and finding in this Marriage the Satisfaction of my Heart, and the Increase of my Fortune, I made a Propofal Yesterday to Dallon the same with yours, which met with no better Reception than your Request to him on the same Subject. I own that the Obscurity of Silvia's Birth gave me great Concern; but less amorous than you, and unwilling to engage myself in a Marriage neither suitable to my Quality nor Interest, I resolved to desist in your Favour; since, notwithstanding the Knowledge of Silvia's Misfortune, you still loved her; and to turn my Thoughts towards Ismena, who though not fo charming as her Friend, has fuch internal Accomplishments as render her amiable, and whose Fortune, Silvia being no longer Dallon's Niece, will render mine opulent and fplendid.

In this Thought I went to find Ismena, to whom I declared my Sentiments, and had the Pleasure of finding that she had no Averfion to my Person; but that penerated with the Fate of her dear Silvia she could relish no Happiness while her Friend was wretched.

HIGHLY charmed with her generous Sentiments, I went out this Morning with a Refolution to declare my Intentions to Dallon,

with

ſ

li

q

h

M

pr Po

ha

Ef

har

wa and

her

be

Ho

wer her

Tea

he i

had to pi

he c

Con

with regard to his Daughter, and to make it one of my Conditions, that in Confideration of this Marriage his Daughter and I should have the Disposal of Silvia; but the barbarous Man has carried her off this Morning by Break of Day, and no body knows where he is to conduct her.

O! Heavens! cried I, Silvia gone, and shall I no more see her! a gloomy Silence succeeding to this Exclamation, I appeared like one who had lost his Judgment and was quite stupissed. The Marquis did not employ his Eloquence to comfort me, but proposed Means to find out the Place of her Retreat, protesting that he would assist me with all his Power to make this Discovery.

d

1.

nd

10,

ad

er-

vith

ould

was

Sen-

Re-

llon, with

THIS Manner of entering into my Grief had more Influence, and produced a better Effect than all the reasoning that he could have employed. I asked him if Miss Dallon was not informed of her Father's Defign; and upon his answering that he had not seen her, it being too early to demand Admittance, begged he would go along with me to her House, which he readily agreed to; and we were upon our Arrival directly introduced into her Apartment, where we found her all in Tears; and conducting us into her Closet, he informed us with what Cruelty her Father had carried off Silvia, without her being able to prevail with him to name the Place where he defigned to put her; and continuing her Complaints addressed to me. We shall see Vol. I. K this this charming Girl no more, faid she, and it is no doubt to bid you an eternal Adieu that she has wrote you this Letter, which I took hastily out of her Hand, and found it contained the following Words.



#### To the Count De Saluce.

AM scarce allowed Time to assure you that I shall not, while I live, forget your generous Proposals; it would perhaps be necessary for my Quiet that I should lose the Remembrance of them, but Gratitude is dearer to me than my Tranquillity; and to give you the only Proofs that are in my Power, be assured that to the last Moments of my Life you shall be the only Worldly Object of my Thoughts; and that since I did not deserve the glorious Title of your Spouse, no Mortal shall have that of Husband to the unfortunate

SILVIA.

F

tl

re

ne

ly

tic

is flatha

Da

litt

ma

has

and

No, no, cried I after reading, either I must find hers or die; and then addressing myself to Ismena; Pardon, Madam, the Transports of a Man in Despair, were not Dallon your Father, nothing should save him from my just Fury; but my Respect for you, and Friendship for my Cousin, prevent the Effects of it. My dear Dantin, added I, le

not my Grief bring any Obstacle to your Happiness, enjoy in Peace the Pleasure of possessing what you love; as for me, to whom Life is become odious after the Loss of Silvia. I will go and wander from Province to Province, visit every Cloyster, and if, after all, I cannot discover where her cruel Tyrant has fhut her up, you shall never see me more, upon which I got up to be gone; but Ismena stopping me, No, said she, you shall not go without the Marquis. If your Paffion makes it impossible for you to live without Silvia, my Friendship and Affection forbid me to enjoy Felicities in which she does not share. I am the only Cause of her Missortune. My Father jealous that her Beauty would conquer those who might come to make their Addresfes to me, by an inconceivable Weakness, rendering her answerable for what Nature has not thought fit to bestow upon me, inhumanly facrifices her to my Defects; it is therefore my Bufiness to let him know the Injustice of his Procedure, and fince he believes that Silvia's Presence hindered my Establishment, we must let him see that her Absence is still more prejudicial, by forcing me to fland out against what would make me happy.

0

ts

ly id

e,

he

1.

rl

fing

the

not him

vou, the

, 161

100

I dare not flatter myself that the Marquis Dantin can be truly touched with one of fo little Merit as I can pretend to; but whatever may be in that, I shall not deny butthat his has made some Impression upon my Heart; and that if I cannot share with him the large

K 2

## 100 The TRAVELS of

Fortune to which I am intitled, none other shall have a Right to it by a Marriage with me; and yet, notwithstanding my Inclination, and the Hopes with which he flattered me Yesterday, I make no Difficulty of declaring to him that I will never confent to be his Wife, until I fee Silvia Countess of Saluce, and that he has affifted you to find her out. It is not in your Presence alone that I make this Declaration, my Father shall no fooner be returned than he shall be informed of my Sentiments, and of the Refolution I have taken to retire into a Convent the rest of my Days, unless he restores to me a Friend whose Society I prefer to the most brilliant Fortune.

p

I

ØI VC

th

di

to

or

tur

Lo

rej

me

into

reta

exa

was

expe

of r

he 1

to le

It is not easy to express the Admiration which such Sentiments raised in the Marquis and me. I sound such an Ease to my Griest that I could hearken to Reason, and Dantin was so penetrated with them, that the Motive of Interest, which had at first influenced him to think of her, was converted into Esteem, and even as violent a Passion as if Beauty had kindled the Flame.

HE threw himself at her Feet, and, by the most tender Protestations, convinced her that without doing him the greatest Injustice, she could not doubt of the Sincerity of his Sentiments, but he conjured her at the same time not to think of retiring, and to permit him to wait for her Father's Return, representing to her that since the Dread alone of seeing Silvia

#### Mademoiselle de Richelieu. IOT

Silvia preferred, had forced him to banish her from his House, it was to be presumed fhe would give him no more Umbrage when he had a Son-in-law, and that he would not refuse to bring her back, or to inform them of the Convent into which he had put her.

THIS Reasoning was just, and too agreeable to Ismena's Desires to contradict it : even I approved of it; but the Agitation of my Mind not permitting me to remain at Lyons a peaceable Spectator of Dallon's Resolutions, I begged they would permit me to vifit all the Cloysters in and about Lyons, while they on their Parts were using their best Endeavours for our common Satisfaction; adding, that this Occupation was alone capable to diffipate the gloomy Ideas with which I was tormented; that the Hopes of finding Silvia, or to learn News of her from them at my Return, would prevent my finking under the Load of my Grief; that I would very foon rejoin them, but that it was impossible for me' to live under the Trouble and Perplexity into which this Event had plunged me.

in

).

ed

to

if

he

hat

1he

nti-

ime

n to

ting

eing

lvia

Ismena and Dantin attempted in vain to retain me, all their Reasons serving only to exasperate my Despair, they judged that it was better to give me my own way, than to expose me to see Dallon in the present Height of my Fury; and that, not knowing when he would return, it was more adviseable to let me indulge my Impatience, than to make

K 3

make me languish under Expectation. I promifed to inform them exactly of all the Steps I made, and to give them Directions from place to place how to write to me; on their Part they promifed to inform me exactly of what passed between Dallon and them; and that not doubting of the Success of their Defign, they were perfuaded that they should foon call me back to be united to Silvia; after which my Coufin and I embraced each other, and the generous Ismena could not see our Separation without shedding Tears.

As I intended to be gone that very Day, Dantin accompanied me to our Lodgings, and having feen me on Horfeback returned to Miss Dallon, to whom his Heart was intirely attached. I was accompanied by two of my Servants; and flattering myfelf that my Miftress had not been carried out of the Province, I made the whole Tour of it, ordering my People to go one Way while I went myself another, and visited with great Exactness all the Convents and Communities, demanding Silvia of all the Abbesses and Prioresses of these holy Retreats, without receiving any Satisfaction, none of them knowing fo much as her Name.

THESE fruitless Inquiries put me into such a terrible Despair that I resolved to visit the neighbouring Provinces before I returned to Lyons. I had written feveral Letters to the Marquis Dantin, and this faithful Friend had punctually answered them; and as his last

Letter

1

F

u

h

Vi

ge

he

ha

to

na

ha far

tifi

fw

the

her

me dor

of a

to e be,

has

for

### Mademoiselle de Richelieu.

Letter informed me that Dallon was returned, that he was to fee him next Day, and that he had conducted Silvia to a Convent in Auvergne, I resolved directly to go there.

103

NEVERTHELESS Dallon, very well fatiffied with his Tourney, and believing that he would hear no more of her whom he looked upon as an Obstacle to his Daughter's Establishment, returned home with a Resolution to fpare nothing to make her a Countess or a Marchioness. Miss Dallon received him with Respect, but did not express so much lov upon his Arrival as he could have wished: and being perfuaded that Silvia's Charms gave her Jealoufy, he magnified the pretended Service he had done, in ridding her of fo dangerous a Rival; and, with a View to render her still more terrible, he recounted all that had passed between us and him; but Ismena. to whom the Marquis had confessed the Inclination he had felt for that beautiful Maid, and had concerted with her what she had to fay, appeared to be unconcerned at this Artifice. I never envied Silvia's Charms, answered she, I was always the first to admire the Graces with which Nature has favoured her, and I should look upon it as a Crime in me to be offended at the Justice which is done to her Merit, it is affronting the Author of our Being, and demeaning ourselves, not to esteem his Workmanship, whatever it may be, and to be jealous of Perfections which he has not thought fit to bestow upon us. for me, who found in Silvia's Friendship, a **fweet** 

,

Y

lf ill

ng

of

ny

ch

ch

the

to

the

had

laft

tter

fweet Consolation for the Charms which Heaven has refused me, I regret much more the Loss of her Presence, than Persections that depend not upon our own Wills: It seemed to me that the Pleasure of being loved by her lent me Graces; and I find myself so disagreeable, even in my own Eyes, since you dragged her from me, that I am ashamed to appear; and therefore, Sir, continued she, be not surprised if I dare make it my Request to you that I may have Permission to retire into a Convent the rest of my Days, and that a Veil may for ever conceal an Ugliness which has made you commit the highest Injustice.

THE Marquis Dantin loves me, and is to follicit you to accept of him as a Son-in-law; but though his Demand does me Honour, and that I have no Repugnance to his Perfon, I earnestly intreat of you to refuse him, having formed a firm Resolution to be a Nun.

THE Merchant's Astonishment at this Discourse was extreme, and not being able to believe either the Marquiss's Love, or that his Daughter would retire from the World, he answered her with a stern Authority, that he was Master of her Destiny, and that he knew very well how to make her obey at a proper Occasion; that as for Dantin, when he spoke to him he would make him a proper Answer, but that if he had changed his Sentiment, it only fortisted him in the Idea which

he

m

D

no L

W

an W

ch

VOI

ing

no

of wil

Vic

it v

niy

men ract

whi

Wo

# Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 105

he formerly had, that Silvia would have kept back those who might have desired his Alliance, since the Marquis, upon not seeing her any more, had taken another Resolution, and therefore he laid strict Commands upon her to mention that Girl no more to him.

Ilmena, satisfied with having made a bold Push, retired without answering, and went to wait in her Apartment the Refult of the Conversation which the Marquis was to have with her Father. In Effect, this Cavalier, pressed by his Love for Ismena, and by his Friendship for me, entered almost the Moment she retired, and when the first Civilities had permitted him to speak freely, looking at Dallon with a smiling Countenance, you are no doubt aftonished, said he, to see me still at Lyons, and I believe you will be still more so, when you shall know that Love detains me, and that Miss Dallon is the Object of my Wishes. My Daughter! interrupted the Merchant with Surprise; did not you tell me that you loved Silvia? I have still for that charming Girl, answered he, a perfect Esteem, but no more Love; I have facrificed it in Favour of my Cousin, with whom my Friendship will not allow me to have any Dispute, the Violence of his Passion making me judge that it was not fo eafily to be governed as mine, my Wishes are turned towards the lovely Ifmena; her Virtue, Wit, and amiable Character, have kindled a Flame in my Heart which will never be extinguished. In one Word, I come to ask her of you in Marriage;

r,

r-

n,

2

if-

to

hat

·ld,

hat he

t a

hen

oper

en-

nich he

V

t

tl

pi

F

Si

yo

an

ing

or o

bac wh

ria

of not

men

Far

not

t,

my

Miss Dallon faluted them with an Air of Coldness, and looking at her Father with Eyes that expressed the melancholy Situation of her Mind; I am forry, Sir, said she, that you expose the Marquis to a Resusal from such a Person as me. I told you already the Design I had taken: I have the most sincere Esteem for him, and if I had a Choice to make, he should be the Man; but I am resolved not to marry, being too unlucky in the Attachments of my Heart to give way to this

I loved Silvia, and you have barbarously taken her from me; I shall have no sooner given way to my Inclination for the Marquis, than you'll find Pretences to break the Ties that you have your self formed: My Resolution is unmoveable, and since it is impossible to prevail with you to restore to me my Friend, that my Tears and Prayers have had no Insuence upon your Heart, don't take it amiss that your Orders have none upon mine.

Dallon was preparing to answer, but was prevented by the Marquis: The constant Friendship, said he, which you preserve for Silvia, is to me too favourable an Omen of your Fidelity to a Husband, to condemn it; and if nothing is wanting but her Presence to ingage you to render me happy, I can not allow my felf to think that your Father will be so much my Enemy as to refuse to bring her back: But, faid Dallon, mad with Anger, what Business has that Girl with your Marriage? Am I obliged to take care all my Life of a Person who is nothing to me, and have I not done enough for her? No, replied Ifmena, throwing herself at his Feet, the first Favour I asked you, was, that you would not deprive me of my Friend, and I again renew it on my Knees; but if you refuse t, don't hope that the Marquis Dantin, or any other shall ever be Ismena's Husband.

h

13

S

n

to

of

ith

on

hat

om

the

e to rethe

this.

Dantin joining with her, begged that he would not put a stop to his Happiness upon so frivolous an Account, promising that Silvia should be no more a Burthen upon him; that he would take care of her, and even reimburfe what she had cost him, if he insisted upon it; giving him to understand plainly enough that, notwithstanding all his Love for Ismena, he would not confent to her being forced to give him her Hand; that he wished to owe the Gift to herfelf, and that her Obedience might not clash with her Inclination, Dallon made new Efforts to be exempted from what was required of him, being still apprehenfive that Silvia's Return might re-kindle the Marquis's Flame, but finding that neither the one nor the other would liften to his Reafons, and that he ran the risk of losing an illustrious Match for his Daughter, he at last yielded, and promised that their Contract should be no sooner signed, than he would give orders to have Silvia fent back to him.

Ismena charmed that her innocent Stratagem had fucceeded, returned her Father a thoufand Thanks, and affured him of her Obedience. The Marquis, who inclined that the Effect of his Promise should not be retarded intreated him to fend for his Notary, which he accordingly did: The Articles were drawn out without Difficulty on either Side, and in the Evening the Parties concerned figned the Contract with an equal Satisfaction, which was scarce terminated when Dantin made Dallon take Pen in Hand to execute his Pro-

mile

in

th

he

fe

te

w

Da

pin ver fro

men

to

that

no .

tho'

Mai

hopi Dal

ceive

with

mise; both Ismena and he declaring that the Ceremony of their Marriage should not be performed but in Presence of Silvia. As the Marquis was now tied, and that he saw no more Danger of her carrying off Sons-in-law, he did not require much Intreaty, the rather, because he had caused to be inserted in the Contract, that Ismena and the Marquis should take charge of this unknown Girl, and should dispose of her as they thought proper.

THE Letter was dispatched, and the Marquis learning by it the Convent into which Dallon had put her, wrote that Moment to inform me where she was, and of every Thing that had passed. It was then that Ismena and he abandoned themselves to the Pleasure of feeing, loving, and telling reciprocally their tender Sentiments without Interruption: But while they believed that the End of every Day approached them to that of their Happiness, strange Things were passing in Auvergne, and having no Answer from me, nor from the Convent, they became uneasy. Ifmena had wrote a most affectionate Letter to her Friend, intreating her to come and share in her Fortune and Happiness, but got no Return; this Silence alarmed them, and tho' Dallon pressed them to conclude their Marriage, they delayed it a Month longer, hoping that I would return to Lyons. In fine, Dallon, who concealed the News he had received, for Fear of afflicting them, wearied with their Delays, shewed them a Letter Vol. I. L

a

em

ou.

be-

the

led,

nich

awn

d in

I the

hick

made

Pro-

## Tio The TRAVELS of

from his Kindswoman the Prioress, by which she informed him of Silvia's having perished in a terrible Fire that had consumed the Convent, and which had raged in so cruel a Manner that the greatest Part of her Nuns had been burnt, the whole Building almost destroyed, and she herself obliged to seek a Sanctuary in a Convent of Saint Flour, from whence she wrote him.

'Tis impossible to imagine the Grief of Ismena and the Marquis, and judging that I must have been informed of this fatal Accident, fince they did not hear from me; Dantin resolved to go in Quest of me, but as it was no longer possible to elude a Marriage which they all defired with an equal Ardour, and that Dallon would not have allowed him to go without Solemnizing it, the Ceremony was performed fome Days after this melancholy News, without any Pomp or Magnificence. Ismena being inconfolable and the Marquiss's Satisfaction not at all perfect, by the Trouble into which the Absence of a Man, whom he looked upon as a fecond Self, and the Melancholy of his Spoufe gave him; he consented without Difficulty to her Intreaties for his going to Auvergne and enquiring himself if it was true that Silvia had really perished, and what was become of me.

WHILE the News of Silvia's Death filled with Grief and Mourning the Hearts of those who interested themselves in her Fate, while Madam Dantin passed the Days and Nights

in

f

i

tl

n

ti

ju

an

ra

fue

no

app

for

the

pre

tor

fen

rec

her

wh

#### Mademoiselle de Richelieu.

in regreting her; and the Marquis was in Quest of me to prevent the Effects of my Despair, and while I was seeking every where the Object of my Wishes, the charming Silvia had escaped the Danger, but not without great Trouble.

THO' she had entered the Convent with less Pain than she immagined to herself, and that the first Days of her Retreat seemed to promise her an absolute Detachment from the World, they were no fooner over, and the alluring Officiousness which the Nuns affect for new Comers was scarce ceased, than, as it were come to herfelf again, the perceived that all her Courage was only a kind of Stunning occasioned by her Misfortune, and not the Effect of a folid and durable Refolution. The fweet Society of an affectionate Friend; the Ease and Plenty which she but just left, the Liberty which she enjoyed, and above all my Image which she could not raze out of her Heart, attacked her with fuch reunited Force that all her Reason could The Cloister then not obtain the Victory. appeared the most terrible of all her Misfortunes; her Piety was even terrified with the Danger of coming under Vows in the present State of her Mind, confumed with a Paffion which Obsticles only increased, tormented with the Mistery of her Birth, and sensibly piqued to be under the Necessity of receiving Affistance from a Stranger, she found herself so remote from the eminent Virtue which a Soul Devoted to Heaven ought to possess L 2

is

16

1

n;

ng lly

lled

ose

hile

ohts

in

posses, that she could not but tremble at the Thoughts of an involuntary Choice.

THESE melancholy Reflections were not the only Subjects of her Distaste to the religious Life, other Motives joined to diffurb her Vocation. She knew that the whole Convent was informed of the Misfortune attending her Birth, and perceived with Grief that, notwithstanding her Talents, they did not regard her as they did those who brought a Portion: But what touched her most was to learn from the Prioress that Dallon had settled nothing upon her by way of Penfion, and that it still depended upon his Pleasure to abandon her intirely. This hard-heartedness, after having brought her up and flattered her with Hopes so different, determined her to declare that she would not be a Nun, and that the Merchant being nothing to her, and doing nothing for her, it was not in his Power to confine her in that House rather than another, and that if he pretended she should remain in it, he must make good his Promise, in settling a Pension upon her. The Prioress, who had agreed in private with him for a small Sum once paid, and who had already received it, answered in a scornful Manner, that it was furprizing a Girl without Name, without Relations, or even a Place of Abode, should pretend to give Laws to those who had the Charity to bring her from nothing to a happy Situation, and therefore commanded her in a haughty and imperious Manner, to submit with a good Grace to her Destiny; threat-

ning

F

re

n

25

pl

fe.

fh

for

G

itfe

she

the

for

Th

of ]

ing

to 1

die

Incl

towa

the g

#### Mademoiselle de Richelieu.

ning to transport her to a Community less honourable than hers if the made the least Refistance to what was required of her. Silvia was extremely mild and patient, but she had a noble Soul, and justly offended at such a Discourse: No Body knows better than I, faid she looking at her with an Air of Confidence, the meanness of the Sacrifice which I should offer to God in devoting myself to his Service, and the first Reason that disfluades me is that I don't think myfelf worthy, but if my Virtue is not sufficient for so grand an Action, it is however too pure to be thus reviled, and retiring the Moment she had pronounced these Words, she left the Prioress as much furprised at her Resolution, as perplexed how to keep her, having engaged herfelf to return the Money she had received, if she refused to take the Vail.

WHILE this Lady was projecting how to force her, Silvia gave herself intirely up to Grief. The Horror of her Situation presented itself in so lively a Manner to her Mind, that the was more than once tempted to write to the Count, and to have Recourse to his Love for her Liberty: But foon condemning this Thought as a thing contrary to the Strictness of Modesty, it made her blush, and fortifying herself in the Resolution she had taken to keep him ignorant of her Fate, and to die rather than to yield to the impulse of her Inclination, she turned her whole Thoughts towards the Almighty, who can alone subdue the greatest Obstacles, and protect the wretch-

n

d

m

t,

25

ut

ild

he

py

1 2

mit

ating

ed; and as her Aversion to the monastick Life did not hinder her from being really pious, she remitted to his providence the Direction of her Destiny. This resignation calmed the Agitations of her Mind, and persuaded that Heaven would not abandon her, and would be a Light to her in the midst of so many Obscurities, she expected from its goodness what her Virtue would not suffer her to expect from Men. She was in these commendable Sentiments when one Night that the whole Community was in a prosound Sleep, and that her Thoughts kept her alone awake, she saw all her Cell in a Flame.

WHAT ever Indifference Misfortunes may give us for Life, it always becomes dear to us at the Approaches of Danger, and the Perfon who in the Height of his Misery, looks upon Death as an Advantage, has it no fooner before his Eyes, than he looks upon it as the most terrible of his Misfortunes, and seeks to avoid it with far greater Haste than he defined The charming Silvia experienced this Truth. Frightened at the Sight of the Flames with which her Chamber feemed to be furrounded, she quickly put her Arms into a loofe Gown, opened her Door, croffed a Gallery, which the Fire had already reached, and made her Escape into the Garden, where fhe was scarce got when she heard the loud Shrieks of the Nuns who confounded with this fatal Accident were running up and down without knowing what they did, some of them in their Smocks and others of them half

1

0

n

th

fh

ch

an

ing

ter

wi

it,

at Sub

ente

the

half dreffed. The Night was extremely dark, and these unfortunate Women were only directed by the Flames that confumed their Silvia's Cell was the first burnt. and the Wind, extremely boifterous, favouring the Impetuofity of the Fire, it foon reached every Part of the Building, and presented a most horrid Spectacle; penetrated with a fincere Compassion, she was imploring the Assistance of Heaven for fo many wretched Creatures ready to perish, when she heard Persons running towards the Graden Gate which opened to the Fields, and judging by the Alarm-Bell that the Prioress had ordered all the Gates of the Convent to be opened, to let those enter who came to give Affistance; pushed by some unknown Motive, she resolved to take this Opportunity to make her Escape. and perceiving feveral People going out at that Door, she followed the Croud, and without thinking what was to become of her. nor where the directed her Steps, the walked the greatest Part of the Night without stopping. Fear gave her Strength, and she thought the could not retire too far from this Melancholy Abode. The Cries of its Inhabitants. and the throwing down Part of the Building to fave the rest, resounded in such a terrible Manner that her Ears were struck with it all the Time that the was running from it, which made her so haften her Pace that at the Break of Day she found herself in the Suburbs of the Town of Saint Flour. As the entered, a Sifter of the Hospital was opening the Gate of that Sanctuary for the Sick. Silvia

r

0

d

is

es

1-

2

3

ed,

ere

buc

ith

wn

of

nem

half

Silvia perceived her, and being very much fatigued went up to her and begged that the would allow her to repose some Hours in the House.

THE Youth and Beauty of our Fugitive as well as her Dress so surprized the good Sifter, that she looked at her a considerable Time without answering, but perceiving that fhe was uneafie and much cast down, she at last began to speak with an Air of Sweetness; don't imagine said she, taking her by the Hand and conducting her into the House, that I hessitate to grant your Request; the Astonishment under which I am to see, at such an Hour and in fuch a Condition, a Person of your Appearance is the only Cause of my Silence; some great Misfortune must have happened that makes you expose yourself in this Manner.

IT is true, answered Silvia shedding Tears, that none is more to be pitied than I. charitable Sifter, moved with these few Words, gently squeezed her Hand, conducted her to her Chamber, and observing that the could scarce support herself, made her lie down in her Bed; and having left her a Moment, returned with a Poringer of Broth, and afterwards embracing her tenderly: My dear Child, faid she, take the Rest that is necessary for you, endeavour to forget what may diffurb it, you are here in Safety, no Mortal can interrupt you; I will go and do the Duties of my Imployment, and will come

1

W

to

CE

in Vic

M

Sle

ma

it w

fion

her

way

till 1

rious

Girl

Nece

Was

come back fome Hours hence to know how you are, and if you will have an intire Confidence in me, I shall perhaps find a Remedy for what afflicts you; God takes many Ways, my Child, to give us Proofs of his Providence; give yourself intirely up to him, and consider that there are no Missfortunes from which he cannot extricate us, when we place our Considence in him.

AFTER this wife and pious Exhortation she shut the Bed and Window Curtains, went out softly, and lest her at Liberty. The lovely Silvia who made had her Tears express her Gratitude to her charitable Benefactrix, was no sooner alone than she returned Thanks to Heaven for her having fallen into so good Hands, judging that it was necessary to conceal nothing of her Situation, she resolved to inform her fully of it, and to act by her Advice: In this Thought, and perceiving her Mind less disturbed, she composed herself to Sleep.

GREATLY fatigued with having passed so many bad Nights, and particularly the last, it was late before she awoke. The compassionate Nun had come several Times to make her take some Nourishment, and having always found her assep, she waited patiently till she should open her Eyes, extremely curious to know by what strange Adventure a Girl so charming had been reduced to the Necessity of asking Sanctuary from her. She was under this Anxiety when Silvia awoke, who

1.

g

le

er

of

r-

eft

get

ty,

nd

vill

me

who perceiving her at the Bedfide, began to express her Gratitude for her generous Care, begging she would continue her Goodness by affifting her with her Advice.

THE charitable Sifter, dazzled with the Beauty which Rest had restored to this charming Girl, and prepoffeffed with a Friendship which it was impossible to refuse her, assured her that she would not limit her Attentions to simple Advices, but that she might depend upon her Service in every Respect as a Mother, conjuring her to inform her of her Misfortunes, and to fear nothing from her Indifcretion.

CANDOUR and Sincerity were fo visibly painted in her Countenance, that Silvia not in the least mistruftful, faithfully related her Misfortune, concealing nothing of her Adventures, except what regarded me, whose Name she did not so much as mention. You fee, Madam, continued she, of what Confequence it is to me to be well advised. Without Parents, without Protection, I know that the Convent is what is most proper for me; and tho' I have no Inclination to be shut up in a Cloister, I make no doubt but my Reason would get the better of my Aversion, if could be admitted as others; but having no Portion to offer, what House would receive me? To return from whence I came there is no Likelihood, after the abusive Threats of the Mother Prioress, and the little Satisfaction I had while in that Convent.

IT

n

C

V

Si

ve

CO

In

CO

ha

T

St.

and

All

m

and

and

ber

the

Pof

fore

It would be equally ridiculous to have Recourse to Dallon in my Missortune, since it is but too visible that he only wanted to get rid of me, without troubling his Head what might be my Fate afterwards, and that he would do no more on this Occasion than on the first. I am perswaded that Ismena his Daughter would not abandon me, were I to make my Case known to her; but I confess that I cannot think of returning to Lyons, after what has happened. Besides, my Friend is not yet her own Mistress; and if her Father came to know that she assisted me, or discovered my Retreat, he would perhaps employ Force to get me out of the Way.

No, my dear Child, answered the good Sifter, you must neither return to your Convent, nor feek Affistance from any Person concerned in Dallon. Suppose you had an Inclination to return to the Convent, you could not be received, for we have just now had Accounts of the Fire which you mention. The Prioress and her Nuns are removed to St. Flour, some of them are with their Friends and others in the Convents of the Town. All the Lay-women and Boarders who were in the Convent, are spread up and down, and several of them perished in the Flames. and they believe you to be among the Number of the dead by the Report that prevails of the Fire's beginning in the Cell of a young Postulante, in which she was consumed, before the Nuns were alarmed, being the most exposed

ot

et

d-

fe

ou

n-

th-

hat

1e;

p in

fon

if I

g no

eive

here

its of

Rion

IT

exposed by the Proximity of that Chamber to the Bake-house where the Fire first began; and therefore I believe it will be your Interest to take the Advantage of this Error, and to change your Name to prevent your being called upon by the Priorefs, and to fecure you against the Defigns of Dallon; if this be agreeable to you the next Thing I would propose is, to place you about a Lady, whose Piety, Rank, and Virtue, will be of greater Affistance to you than any Thing I can think

THE Countess of Mirelle, added she, which is this Lady's Name, is a Widow retired about a Month fince to a Country Seat about two Leagues from this. Her House is as regular and orderly as a Convent; no Pride no Oftentation, nothing but what is agreeable to the ftrictest Decorum and Decency to be feen within her Gates, and her greatest, nay her only Pleasure is to affist the wretched; the only fees her deceased Husband's Relations and a few particular Friends, but so seldom that not to be intirely alone the is refolved to feek out a proper Person for a Companion, on whom she will bestow her Friendship and a Share of her Fortune. As she is a great Benefactrix to our House, and that I am appointed to receive what she is pleased to bestow upon us, she laid her Commands on me to look out for fuch a Person as she defires; good Sense and Virtue are what she demands, referving to herfelf the Care of every thing elfe. However,

f V

G

m

yc

W

in

fie

upo

tha

Ahof t

has Tha

**we**i Cha

the !

me ; **feffed** 

feein

that y

at one Vc

HOWEVER, as I imagine that one is still more regarded when they can tell what they are, I am of Opinion that you must not appear there as a Person unknown to yourself, and without assuming vain Titles, you are only to take that of Orphan of honest People, whom Fortune had deprived of the Means of putting you in a Way to fubfift after their Death; by this Expedient we shall excite Compassion, without being liable to be despised; and I am confident that the Countess will foon put you in a Condition to have no Occasion for any body's Assistance. This is, my dear Silvia the best Advice I can give you; the Countess puts Confidence in me, I will prefent you to her, and recommend you in such a Manner that you shall be satisfied.

IT is impossible to express Silvia's Joy upon this Proposal; she was so transported that the clasped her Benefactrix in her Arms: Ah! Madam, faid she, how fensible am I of the Effects of Providence, in the Care it has taken to conduct me here, and what Thanks do I not owe you? My Child, answered she returning her Caresses, though Charity should not prompt me to affist you. the Friendship I have for you would force me; your Youth and Beauty have prepofsessed me in your Favour, and the Dread of feeing you exposed to greater Dangers than that which you have now escaped, made me at once think of preserving you from them. Vol. I.

a ł,

1;

a-

19

m.

ad-

is a

at l

d to

on

de-

The e of

ER,

Perhaps the Aversion you have for the Monastic State proceeds from the Permission of Heaven, which deprives you of the Means of being a Nun, with a Defign to restore you to your Parents. In fine, I have a Sort of Prophetic View of a thousand Advantages that will redound to you from being with the Countess de Mirelle. I am to go to her House after To-morrow in a Coach which she fends me, and you shall accompany me; fo make yourfelf easy and have Pa-

Silvia reiterated her Thanks, and they both agreed that fhe should give herfelf out for a Merchant's Daughter in the Neighbourhood of Auvergne, who having failed, had left her without the least Support, or Relations capable to affift her; that having no Mother, and not knowing what Course to take, she had formed a Defign to be one of the Charity Sifters in the Hospital of St. Flour, to which Place the had come with that Intention; and that having addressed herself to Sister St. Martha, the Name of her Benefactrix, the had diffuaded her from it, finding her too weak and delicate for the Work of that House, and had destined her for the Countes de Mirelle. Having thus concerted their Measures, Silvia directly changed her Name to that of Galista.

1

t

ti

th

tu

to

th

CO the

tu

ap

of

SISTER St. Martha, animated by a Spirit of Charity, which rendered her attentive to the minutest Things, reflecting that Silvia

me in cont havenre

had faved nothing from the Fire but the Gown which she had upon her, cloathed her with the Garments of a Stranger who had died at the Hospital, and who had no other Reason for coming there but to be better taken Care of, and who at her Death had made her a Present of her Cloaths and Linnen, as an Acknowledgment of her Care and Services; which put it in Sister St. Martha's Power to equip the new Calista in a genteel Manner, and to provide her with Necessaries.

This charming Girl was at a Loss to find Terms to acknowledge such Generosity; and the Sister on her Part racked her Invention to prove the Esteem she had conceived for her. In fine, mutually charmed with one another, they passed the two Days they had to remain together with an equal Satisfaction.

Sister St. Martha perswaded that she could not make the Countess de Mirelle a more acceptable Present, waited with Impatience the Moment of presenting Calista to her; and she on her Part, flattering herself that she should find about this Lady a Sanctuary against Adversities, and live unknown to the Count de Saluee, did not desire it less than her Benefactrix, the Picture which she constantly represented to her of the Countess, the Encomiums which she made on her Virtue, and the Retirement in which she lived, appeared to agree so well with the Situation of her Heart, that she already formed a thou-

16

nat efs

eir

me

irit

lvia

had

fand flattering Projects of Tranquillity, hoping that the Example and Piety of Madam de Mirelle, whom St. Martha represented still young and handsom, would bring her Reason to triumph over a Passion which could never be happy.

THIS Lady's Coach not having failed to come at the Hour appointed, they fet out together in it; and the Countess was no sooner informed of its Arrival than the advanced, according to Custom, to receive St. Martha; but perceiving that she was accompanied by a Person in a secular Habit, whose surprizing Beauty struck her, she abridged her usual Civilities, and asked her hastily who this charming Person was. St. Martha, who had directly perceived her Admiration upon the Sight of Calista: It is, answered she, Madam, a Present which I take the Liberty to offer you. I shall not pretend to extol her external Charms, you fee them, these are Advantages of which we ought to make fo fmall Account that I pass them slightly over; but I can affure you that her Wit and Modesty far surpass her Beauty.

AFTER which she told her what Silvia and she had concerted, and painted out her Situation in so lively Colours, that the Countess, whose Eyes were constantly fixed upon her, and who was extremely moved, could not restrain the Tears that forced their Way, and came trickling down her Cheeks.

THE

t

to

y

G

m

of

in

A

to

aci

ler

pre

her

tho

Wit

froi

par

to Whi

THE fair Calista (who had been no less moved in accosting her, and who by some unknown Power, which she attributed to her Timidity, felt herself penetrated with a Respect that no other Person had ever raised in her) perceiving how she was moved at Sifter St. Martha's Discourse, threw herself at her Feet, and embracing her Knees with a Transport which it was not in her Power to reftrain: Yes, Madam, said she, you see before you an unfortunate Creature, who comes to implore your Pity, and to beg Permission to consecrate all the Moments of her Life to your Service.

THESE few Words accompanied with the Graces which the knew how to diffuse in her most simple Actions, finishing the Conquest of Madam de Mirelle's Heart: Oh! charming Calista, answered the clasping her in her Arms, what Heart could be fo barbarous as to refuse such a Treasure? For my Part, I accept of it as a Gift from Heaven, and folemnly promife to use all my Endeavours to preferve it.

e

0

)-

na

er

n-

on

uld

ay,

HE

In pronouncing these Words she hugged her still closer in her Arms, and gave her a thousand tender Kisses. Califta received them with Transport, Streams of Tears flowed from the Eyes of both, and they could not part. The good and pious Martha charmed to perceive this sudden mutual Friendship, which she attributed to the Effects of a simpa-

M 3

thetic

thetic Virtue, excited by the Conformity of their good and chaft Inclinations, bleffed, in fecret, the Thought with which she had been inspired, and mingled Tears of Joy with theirs, for having so well succeeded in her Design.

MADAM de Mirelle boaded her with Thanks, and proved her Satisfaction by augmenting her Benefactions to the Hospital; she obliged her to flay Dinner, and the beautiful Califta, whom the Prefence and Careffes of the Countess had recovered from all her Melancholy, displayed so much Wit and Modesty, that the Countess could not enough admire her; and far from imitating those who accompany Favours with Expressions of Compassion more offensive than charitable, and who only pity the wretched that they may the better make them feel the Weight of their Mifery, and the Confequence of what they do to extricate them; she rendered Thanks to Heaven for having made Choice of her to terminate that of Califta, and without ever pronouncing one fingle mortifying Word, she made it her whole Business to comfort her, by representing that Afflictions were but for a Time; that she flattered herfelf this Day would prove the Period prescribed to hers, and that she begged of her to banish them all from her Memory, that she might the better share in the Pleasure which the herfelf felt, to have her as a Companion of her Solitude.

r

0

n

y

€I

a

pe

de H

lin

CO

up

Di

Co

Lo

tha

and

Ho

So much Generofity and Goodness could not miss to augment in Silvia's Heart the extreme Tenderness which she had at first felt. Sifter St. Martha passed the Day with them. and in the Evening the Countes's Coach reconducted her to the Hospital. Califia at parting renewed her Thanks, expressing a great Regret that she had no better Proofs to give of her Gratitude for all her Favours than meer Words. My dear Child, answered she, I find my Recompence in the Pleasure of feeing you sheltered from the Misfortunes of Life; and the Generofity of the Countess has overpaid a Service in which Interest had no Share: You cannot be better than where you are, fince you are not in a Convent; endeavour to keep yourfelf in this House; Madam de Mirelle has no Children, and is in a Condition to do a great Deal for you: I perceive that the first Glance of the Eye has decided in your Favour, and that your Heart corresponds with hers; endeavour to link them more and more by a discreet and complaifant Behaviour, and always depend upon my Friendship.

Calista affured her that she would have no Dissiculty to follow her Advice; that the Counters had inspired her with Sentiments of Love and Respect, till then unknown to her; that secret Ties seemed to bind her to her; and that by a Happiness which she could not too much admire, she found herself in this House as if she had been in it all her Life. The

1-

ng

to ns

er-

re-

ner

The

ich

ion

So

The kind Sifter St. Martha bleffed Heaven and then took the Road to St. Flour.

WHEN the Countess found herself alone with Calista she renewed the Assurances of her Friendship; and calling for her Women and other Domestics, commanded them to ferve and shew her the same Respect as they did to herfelf; and, being defirous to have her always near her, ordered the Apartment next to her own to be prepared for her, into which she could enter by a Door at the Back of her Bed; and the very next Day she gave her in Cloaths, Linnen, and Jewels, all that was necessary and agreeable to a Perfon of her Age, accompanying her Presents with so many Marks of Tenderness, that Califta preferred the Manner of bestowing to the Things themselves. These two Persons were not long before they mutually discovered in one another Qualities worthy of their Admiration, and the most perfect Esteem soon followed upon the ardent Friendship that they had at first felt. we store how store made

It feemed by their tender Union, the Resemblance of their Sentiments, and the Conformity of their Thoughts, that they had been destined to live together. The Countess had a great Share of Wit, Reading, and Delicacy: Calista was nothing inferior, and the amiable Talents which she possessed being joined rendered her Society charming. Madam de Mirelle played a little on the Harpsteel; and the beautiful Calista, who touched

it

E

k

m

CE

ev

th

pe

pe

Spe

tha

fpo

her

kne

W

for

he

band Esta

thou

Rill

again

it in the last Perfection, made her often pass many agreeable Moments, by accompanying on this Instrument the admirable Voice which Nature had bestowed on her. Nevertheless, notwithstanding their reciprocal Tenderness, their Confidence was not as yet arrived at the Point of mutually declaring the Secrets of their Hearts, not but they both of them had a very great Defire to do it.

Califta who had often perceived that the Counters fighed, and even shed some Tears when she looked at her, would have willingly known the Caufe, and imagining that by making a full Discovery of herself, her Sincerity might induce her to be free, she was every Moment upon the Point of declaring the Truth of her Birth, but a timorous refpectfulness which she could not conquer, stopped her Mouth the Moment she intended to Speak.

d

r

n y

ne

ne

ad es

e-

nd

ng

afi-

ned.

it

HER Circumspection went even so far, that perceiving Madam de Mirelle never spoke of her Family, she durst not inform herself of what concerned her, she only knew by fome incoherent Discourses of her Women, that the was a Widow, and that for Reasons which she herself alone knew, he did not go by the Name of her late Hufband, that of Mirelle being the Name of an Estate; that she was extremely rich, and though not above Thirty-eight Years old and still beautiful, she had resolved not to marry again, and had retired from Diversions and Company

Company to live in the Country in the Exercises of Piety and Charity.

As Califta heard these Things but confusedly, and according to the Occasions which gave her Women Opportunities to converse about them, and not daring to queftion them, she had learned nothing farther from them; but it appeared fo fingular that this Lady should prefer the Name of an Estate to that of her Husband, and that for fifteen Days she had been with her not a Mortal had come to visit her, her Curiosity about the Countess increased every Minute, who on the other Hand believing herfelf fufficiently informed about Califta, no Suspion troubled her upon this Head; but not being free of Uneafiness upon other Subjects, all her Moments were not calm and peaceable, even Califta had recalled to her Memory Things which always renewed her Grief; and tho fhe might have foftned them by laying het Heart open to her Companion; yet as they contained a Miftery fo dangerous to be brought to Light, the was forced to bury it in Silence; and it was this perpetual Confraint that made her often figh, and forced Tean from her Eyes, which Califta had frequently perceived.

This lovely Maid, who notwithanding all her Refolutions, could not altogether for get me, and who nourished in the Bottom of her Heart a Passion the more pungent as it was not dissipated by any Object, having no

Opportunity

2

0

T

th

M

T

an

pii

my

Co

Pa

but

had

wh

mai

to a

I

ing

ceiv fecti

Han

Refi

lefs

n n

Opportunity of conferring with any body who might combate her Weakness, would have willingly discovered it to Matlam de Mirelle, in order to find in her Counsels the Remedies which her Reason could not afford, but a certain Respect mixed with Timidity, as I have already said, obliged her to be filent.

A Month had passed in this Manner, when one Day, as the Countess and Califta were walking in an Alley bordered with lofty Trees, with which the Park was furrounded, they perceived, advancing towards them, a Man whom they both knew, but with Thoughts very different. Califta turned pale and was mute, and Madam de Mirelle stepping towards him with Precipitation: Ah! my God, cried she, it is my Son, 'tis the Count de Saluce; and then redoubled her Pace, believing that Califta followed her: but this charming Girl, whom these Words had thrown into an Astonishment, out of which the could not recover herfelf, had remained in the same Spot without being able to advance or retire.

en

lgs

10'

ner

ney

ght Si-

aint ears

ntly

ding

for-

m of

as i

ng no

HOWEVER, Madam de Mirelle and I being come up close to one another, I was received by her with all possible Marks of Affection, she embraced me and I kissed her Hand; and when these first Testimonies of Respect and Friendship were over, the Countess perceiving an extraordinary Melancholy in my Looks, and all the Symptoms of a

long Diffemper, or of a violent Grief. The Condition in which I find you, faid she, is a heavy Draw-back upon my Joy. Is it posfible, my dear Count, that after three Months Absence I shall only see you again to put me under the deepest Concern? What has happened to you? What has occasioned the strange Change which I observe in you?

AH! Madam, answered I fighing, you see the most unfortunate of all Men, my Despair is at the highest Pitch; I know myself no more, and if it were allowable to give myfelf Death, I would prefer it to the fatal Torment to which I am condemned; but a small Degree of Reason which I still have, has obliged me to come and apply to you for Comfort, which I can have no where elfe; hoping that your Virtue, Counfels, and Goodness, will replace into my Mind a Tranquillity which I am not capable of giving myself.

I am this Moment arrived, I thought to find you alone, and to inform you without Witnesses of the Subject of my Misfortunes; but in coming into the Castle, I was told that a Lady was with you, and that you were taking a Turn together. I was some Time indetermined whether I should endeavour to find you out; but my Impatience to fee you getting the better, and perswading myself that this Lady would soon leave us at Liberty, I have ventured to come to you

MY

l

b

W

r L

lig

fh

CO

fh C

ing

Ma ed,

her

ted wa! My Companion, said the Countess will put us under no Constraint; she's a lovely Girl whom I have taken to keep me Company in my Retirement; her Merit has endeared her to me, and if your Trouble be of a Nature to be softned, I am sure she can still contribute more than I; however, continued she, if her Presence gives you the least Uneasiness, she will retire to her Apartment when you want to speak with me about your Affairs.

While she spoke thus walking and still advancing with me towards the Place where the trembling Silvia had remained, this beautiful Maid not daring to show herself intirely, had turned so as that I could only see her back Parts; and as my Mind was taken up with too gloomy Thoughts to permit me to remark any Thing, I had scarce bestowed a Look upon her, but the Countess soon obliged me to view her: My dear Calista, said she, desiring her to approach, I have so long confined you to a Solitude that 'tis but just I should release you a Moment in savour of the Count de Saluce.

d

ill

ch

to

out

es ;

told

rere ime

rour

to

ding

us at

you

MY

As Calista could no longer avoid approaching, she saluted me with a Confusion which Madam de Mirelle might have easily remarked, had not my Melancholy wholly taken up her Thoughts. On the first Surprize I quitted the Countess's Hand whom I affished to walk, and, without thinking what I was do-Vol. I.

ing, ran to throw myself at Calista's Feet, where, transported with Joy and Surprize: O Heavens! cried I, ah! great God, shall I believe my Eyes. Adorable Silvia, is it you I see? How were you preserved from the Flames, and by what happy Adventure are you in this Place? Ah! Count what have you done, answered she, retiring from me with Precipitation, alas I am ruined. She could say no more, Fear and Astonishment having seized her in such a Manner that she fainted, and would have fallen had not the Countes speedily advanced to support her, though she was herself in a Condition little different.

Transports, and perceiving by Madam de Mirelle's Looks that my Passion had made me guilty of Imprudence, I was forry for my Indiscretion; but not knowing how to repair it, and Silvia's Condition augmenting my Trouble, I only thought of what was most pressing, and to assist the Countess in bringing Silvia to her Senses again. Our Endeavours were not useless, she opened her Eyes, from which immediately slowed a Torrent of Tears.

a

te

n

V

tl

W

fe

W

le

yo

fel

en

has

un Fo

ria

MADAM de Mirelle, who discovered in this Adventure a Mistery which displeased her, and who nevertheless felt her Heart rent by Galista's excessive Grief, was at a Loss which Way to behave. However, this beautiful Girl, drowned in Tears, and I more like a Statue

Statue than a Creature animated, being a Scene not at all proper to be feen by her People, she made a Sign to me to assist her in conducting Calista to a Saloon at the End of the Alley where we were walking; I obeyed, and when we were got into it, Calista, who could no longer support the Countess's Looks, threw herself at her Feet, and embracing her Knees: Allow me, Madam, said she, by a sincere Confession of what I am, to justify my Conduct, and to deface the bad Impressions which the Count de Saluce's Transport may have given you of it.

I am not so sudden in taking Offence, answered the Counters: I love you Galista, and feel myself much readier to excuse than to condemn you; and if any Thing affects me in this Adventure, 'tis only the Mistery you have made of your Acquaintance with the Count. Alas! Madam, replied she, I would have willingly concealed it from myself, and I thought I was so secure here from what has now happened, that I had not the least Suspicion.

9

e

g

as

in

nner

this

by

rich

tiful

ke a

atue

AH! cruel Silvia, interrupted I, cannot you justify yourself without killing me. For in fine, Madam, continued I, addressing myself to the Counters, 'tis no longer Time to endeavour to conceal what my Imprudence has but too plainly discovered. I adore this ungrateful Maid; I would have shared my Fortune and Life with her, when a Barbarian carried her off from me.

N 2

IN-

INFORMED that she had been conducted to a Convent near St. Flour I flew thither: But Gods what a difmal Spectacle found I there; Nuns frighted, and Flames devouring that facred Retreat were the first Objects that presented themselves to my View. Alarmed for my dear Silvia, I inquired about her of all those whom I saw going in and out of that House without receiving the least News.

In fine, I ventured to go in my felf; and meeting in my Way Nuns who were making their Escape, I asked them if they knew what was become of Silvia? They all cried out that she was the very first Victim, and that the Fire having broke out in her Chamber had intirely confumed it. What Thunderbolt for a Lover so tender as I.

Consulting nothing then but my Despair, I rushed into the Places where the Fire appeared to be most violent, resolved to bury myself under the Ruins of the Convent; but my Servants forcibly pulled me away, made me mount my Horse, and conducted me rather as a Prisoner than their Master to Riom. I hoped to have found you there; but to compleat my Misfortune, I understood that you was retired to this Place, where, under another Name than my Father's, you were resolved to end your Days.

THIS

ł

I

A

m en

fo

D

the

too

Tu

fee

Me

wh

libl

Was

Iped

to g

This new Stroke adding to my former Oppression I was seized with a burning Fever, and struggled between Life and Death for about 15 Days, flattering myself at last with an approaching End of my wretched Fate, when the Marquis Dantin arrived at Riom; this faithful Friend, who knew my Misfortune, and who made no Doubt of the dismal Situation of my Mind, had tore himself from the Arms of a beloved Spoule to find me out, and to give me all the Comfort in his Power. His affiduous Endeavours and wife Remonftrances have partly produced the Effect which he promised to himself, in calling back my Reason, and hindering me from making any Attempts upon my Life.

Bur not being able to calm my Grief, I refolved to come and find you, in order to make a Trial if the Pleasure which I always enjoyed in your Conversation, would not in fome measure footh my Pains; and while Dantin is gone to rejoin his Spouse, and thereafter to bring her to this Country, I took the Road to the Place of your Retreat. Judge, Madam, of my Surprize and Joy upon feeing in her whom you call Califta, and whose Merit you so much extol, that same Silvia whom I adore, and whose Death was infallibly going to cause mine. I must confess I was not Master of my first Transport; Respect, Prudence, Decorum, all was forgot to give Way to the Pleasure which I felt.

.

e-

re

ry

ut

de

ra-

om.

to

hat

der

rere

HIS

N 3

I

I believed that she was known to you. and that you were ignorant of none of her Adventures, and that I might without dread give way to my joy in your Presence. But O Heavens! when my Love manifests itself with so much Ardour, I find nothing but Terror, Surprize, and Tears: My Presence is odious, and she has the Inhumanity to own that the could with never to remember me more. Ah! Silvia, added I transported, that rigid Virtue which made you reject the Offer of my Hand and Faith, those noble Sentiments that forced you to furmount the mutual Sympathy which united our Hearts, were not then fincere, and were only the better to conceal from me your Contempt and Hatred.

Silvia who never ceased weeping during this Discourse without raising herself from the Countefs's Knees, tho' feveral Times defired, perceiving that I remained filent, began to open her Mouth, and after ardently killing the Countess's Hand; you see Madam said she, by what the Count has related that I did not expect him here, and that believing me dead he had no Hopes of finding me in this, or any other Place. I will not deny but that it was with an Intention to prevent his finding me out, that taking the Advantage of the Report of my Death I changed my Name, and if I had suspected that the virtuous Countels de Mirelle was his Mother in Law, I never should have had the Honour to be in her Company: But alas! the Motive is very different

q

ai

f

ra

fo

of

to

w

an Sa

in

hac

he I

tion

Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 139 different from that with which he accuses me.

LEAVE off your Reproaches both of you, interrupted the Countess, whom a secret Trouble agitated in an extraordinary Manner; I have a greater Interest than you imagine in what regards you, lay your Hearts open to me, conceal nothing, and inform me my dear Calista how you came by the Name of Silvia, which the Count just now gave you. At these Words obliging her to get up and sit down by her, she earnestly intreated that she would discover her true Birth, judging rightly by the Change of her Name, she had made a Mystery to her of every Thing that concerned her.

Silvia was so far from refusing her Request that she related in what Manner Dallon had brought her up, and how strictly Ismena and she were united by the Ties of Friendship, drawing a noble Picture of the Character and Virtue of that tender Friend, not forgetting the Fears the Merchant was under of the Matches offering rather to her than to his Daughter, and the Resolution into which this Apprehension had drawn him; and in fine, continued Silvia, the Count de Saluce having arrived at Lyons, and asked me in Marriage, believing I was his Niece, he had declared to him that I was not, and that he did not so much as know those to whom I owed my Birth. Tho' fuch a Declaration, ought to have extinguished the Count's

t

d

10

it

ng

e-

nd

ess

ver

her

ery

Love, the Generofity of his Soul augmented its Ardour; and far from esteeming me less, he offered to repair my Misfortune by uniting our Fates.

I WILL own, Madam, that his Merit had already made a confiderable Progress in my Heart, without his knowing it; but this generous Behaviour completing his Victory, it was not in my Power wholly to conceal my Sentiments; and I thought Gratitude not only obliged me to have fuch for him, but also excused the Weakness of a Discovery. However, notwithstanding all my Tenderness, and his pressing Sollicitations I refused the Honour which he intended me, from the fole Motive of his Glory, which I thought would be tainted by a Match fo disproportio-

I should not, perhaps, have hefitated, had my Parents, whatever they might be, been known to me, by reprefenting to myfelf that I was not the first, who, from an obscure Birth, had been elevated to a brilliant Fortune; but being intirely ignorant who I am, if I owe my Life to Criminals or to People of Honour, I thought myfelf obliged to avoid dragging into my Misfortunes a Man fo worthy of a happier Fate; and as Dallon had given me to understand that a Convent was my only Refource, and that I dreaded the Count's Violence, I kept this Resolution a Secret from him, and made him hope that Time would foften Ismena's Father. I did

not

i W th

of

th

ap

W

H

Go

Ca

her

red

Col

tire.

Nar

abou

not imagine, indeed, that he would have hurried me so quickly away; but the very next Morning he dragged me from Ismena's Arms, and conducted me to a Convent in the Neighbourhood of St. Flour, to which the Harshness of the Prioress and her abusive Language having given me a Disgust, I was under a great Uncertainty what to do, when the Fire gave me a favourable Opportunity of making my Escape from my Prison.

THE Flames, which in Reality had first broke out in my Cell, gave me an Opportu. nity of getting out before any body was awake. The Light of the Fire having made me find my Way to the Gardens, and all the Gates having been opened almost at the same instant, I joined the Crowd of those who were running out, gained the Fields, and at the Point of Day found myfelf in the Suburbs of St. Flour, where I perceived the Gates of the Hospital opening and one of the Sisters appearing; I accosted her, and begged she would allow me to repose a few Hours in the House, to which she consented with so much Goodness, and used me with so much tender Care and Civility, that I freely discovered to her the deplorable Condition to which I was reduced: It is true I did not mention the Count de Saluce, believing that I ought intirely to forget him.

t

è

1,

of

id

1-

iad

vas

the n a

hat

did

not

This excellent Sifter moved with my Narration, determined immediately to place me about you, and never having named you but as

the

the Countess de Mirelle, and finding no Conformity between you and him, of whom my Virtue made me dread the Presence, I gladly accepted the Proposal; but the Shame of presenting to you a Wretched unknown, and the Desire of supporting the Report of my Death, that my Retreat might be the safer, made me resolve on changing my Name, and to give myself an Origin that might hinder you from being ashamed of your Goodness towards me.

You know the rest Madam, loaded with your Benefactions, attached to you by the most warm Affection, and the most persect Acknowledgment, I flattered myself to pass the Remainder of my Days under your Wings; but this Day, more to be pitied than ever, the Count de Saluce comes innocently to destroy all my Hopes; and I see with the utmost Grief, that not being here more worthy of him than I was at Lyons, I shall be banished from your Sight, to avoid being exposed to his; and that justly alarmed at an Amour so disproportionable, I am upon the Point of losing for ever your good Graces, and perhaps your Esteem.

THE fair and unfortunate Silvia could not pronounce these last Words but with Sobs that smothered her Voice at every instant. Madam de Mirelle was so moved herself, that for a considerable Time she could do nothing but lift up her Eyes to Heaven as if she was petitioning for some Favour.

1

t

V

r

it

W

C

C

he

D

for

mi is

At

lon

Ship

a

Da

any

In fine, making an Attempt to flop her Tears she embraced Califta; and pressing her Cheek to hers: My dear Silvia, said fhe, the Name which you bear is too precious to me to neglect informing myfelf of all the Circumstances that may accompany it. This Dallon who brought you up, did he receive nothing from the Stranger who committed you to her Care, that may help to make you known? Ah! Silvia, how happy should we both be if my Conjectures proved true.

AT this Discourse, Silvia remembering the Fragment of a Letter which she fastened to the Ribbon that was about her Neck, and of which she had made no Mention in her Narration from the Inutility, as she thought, of it, drew it hastily out of her Bosom, and with a trembling Hand presented it to the Counters, who greedily and under the greatest Concern unfolding it, had no fooner thrown her Eyes upon it, than stretching out her Arms to Silvia: Ah! Silvia, ah! my Daughter, cried she, have I then at length found you? Good God! interrupted I, as much surprized as frighted: What, Madam, is Silvia my Sifter? The Countess gave no Attention to this Exclamation: Nature too long constrained under the Form of Friendthip and Compassion, broke out in so tender a Manner between the Mother and the Daughter, that they neither faw nor heard any thing.

-

he

es,

not

lobs

ant.

that

ning

W 28

IN

But

But poor disconsolate I, having several Times repeated the fame Thing, Madam de Mirelle, loath to leave me long under this Perplexity, left off for a Moment the Careffes with which she loaded Silvia; and stretching out her Hand to me: My dear Count, faid she, chear up again, I am Silvia's Mother, but she is not your Father's Daughter. I plainly see that this Riddle astonishes you, and that knowing no other Husband of mine but the Count de Saluce, you cannot conceive, without suspecting my Honour, how I could have a Child of which he was not the Father: But in fine, it is now Time to unfold the Miftery, and fince Heaven in restoring to me Silvia adds to my Happiness that of knowing your Love to her, and that the is worthy of you; I will make you both happy, by declaring a Secret which has been a terrible Drawback upon the Pleasures of my Life; but, added she, let us return to the Castle, 'tis there where we shall find the Proof of Silvia's Birth, and where you will more commodiously hear the Story that I am going to relate to you.

Though extremely furprized at what I heard, yet I was so well pleased to know that this beautiful Maid was not my Sifter, and that I might hope to be her Husband, that I would have willingly dispensed with the Countess's Relation, if it had interested none but myself; but the Satisfaction of two Per-

fons

(

W

fa

bi

yo

m

fo

me

she

lon

ftil

ing nob

my

und

Dur

enou

the .

of I

even

offere V

#### Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 145

fons who were so dear to me being preferable to my own, I submitted to their Will.

Silvia durst scarce give Credit to what the heard, notwithstanding the Assurances that Madam de Mirelle gave her of her Birth, and the Voice of Nature which spoke from the Bottom of their Hearts at first Sight. In fine, when we had entered the Castle, all three in a very different Situation of Mind from what we were under on our coming out; the Countess conducted us into her Closet, where taking out of a little Box a Paper fuch as that which Silvia had just given her: Here is, faid she, what will terminate all our Doubts; but before I speak of this Paprr I must inform you of the Events of my Life. Upon which. making us take our Places, she began in the following Manner, addressing herself to me.

IT is of fo great Importance to you, faid she, to know my Secret, that I would have long ere new declared it to you, had I not still entertained some faint Hopes of recovering Silvia. I am born, as you know, of noble Blood, but without Fortune. I lost my Father when but a Child, and remained under the Conduct of the Marchioness of Durnant my Mother, who was still young enough to think of a second Marriage; but the Love of Liberty furpaffing the Motives of Interest that ought to have induced her even with Regard to me, fince no Pretenders offered who were not willing to make a Settle-Vol. I. ment

of

1-

to

t I

hat

and

at I

the

one

Per-

fons

ment in my Favour, she delayed so long marrying a second Time that, Age joining to Indigence, there was no more thinking of it; but when Youth had left her, when Diversions and Pleasures had taken their Flight along with it, and when she saw me at Age to be provided, she repented her past Conduct.

As the had diffipated the little that my Father left, and that the had scarce wherewith. all to educate me; she was forced to shut herfelf up with me, and to avoid Company as much as she had formerly fought it, not to have the Confusion of discovering her Misery. Nevertheless, I must do her the Justice due to her Care of my Education, in acknowledging that she even outdid her Power. She loved me parfionately, and it was this Tenderness which she felt too late, that made her often regret the Advantages she had refused, I did all in my Power to make a suitable Return to her Goodness, and made it a Law to put in Practice the wife Instructions which she conftantly gave me.

We lived in a frugal plain Manner, receiving no Visits; and all our Domesticks consisting in two Women, of whom one still attended me, when I was obliged to go out, which never happened but when the Exercises of Piety and Devotion called me to Church.

Bur

f

I

d

CC

fh

th

in

an

tak

per

fes

no

tha

had

bou one

Vice

But this obscure and retired Life could not hinder the young Count de Mirelle from seeing and loving me. Our Houses joined; and whatever Precautions I took not to be taken Notice of, Chance contrived it so that he met me several Times going out or coming in. He was neither a Stranger to my Name nor my Quality; but as we had no Correspondence, and that the Noise of our straitned Circumstances was but too much spread about, he did not know me particularly.

THE Care I took to conceal my Face with my Hood exciting his Curiofity, he formed a Resolution to follow me wherever I went, and to discover whether it was Modesty or Ugliness that made me so carefully conceal myself from every body; but not shewing my Face more in the Churchesthan in the Streets, he resolved to speak to me, judging that good Manners would oblige me to answer him.

.

0

e

-9

ks

ut, er-

to

BUT

I had not observed his Motions, being wholly taken up with our Family Troubles; and persuaded that none would make their Addresses to me in my melancholy Situation, I had no Thoughts of making Conquests; though at that Time I might, without Vanity, have had some Pretensions to share with my Neighbours. I was therefore extremely surprized one Day as I was returning from divine Service, to find myself stopped by a young Man,

who, taking me by the Hand, begged I would allow him to affift me in walking.

SHE who accompanied me knowing him to be the Count de Mirelle, told me directly with the Tone of a Governant, that I ought not to refuse the Honour which the Count did me; thus authorized by this Woman, I made him a Courtesey, and accepted of his Civility, or if you please Gallantry. I am very unfortunate, said he, as we walked along, that being your Neighbour I am however so little known to you, that you must have another's Permission to trust me with conducting you.

I don't think, answered I, lifting up my Hood to look at him, that you ought to be offended at this Referve in a Person of my Age, who cannot be too circumspect; I confels that I know not to whom I am fpeaking, and that, without what this Woman hasfaid, I should have been guilty of an Incivility. While I was speaking I observed that he examined me with great Attention, and changed Colour every other Moment. I did not feel myself less troubled than he. The Count de Mirelle had scarce reached his Twentyfourth Year, all the Graces were reassembled in his Person, and without Flattery my dear de Saluce, you only excepted, I have not feen a Man who could be compared to him.

e to fine civilett deeped by a young Man,

I know

1

fe

h

M

he

ed

bo

hu

Li

Wil

Ho

Dif to 1

For

tude

.oring

bearing ylamatiza andler

was remreled from diving Ser-

#### Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 149

I know not if Indigence and Want of the Necessaries of Life do not give Hearts a stronger Propensity to tender Sentiments than Riches and Opulence, from the Melancholy to which they are habituated, or if the Accomplishments both external and internal of the Count forced me to furrender; but it is certain that I loved him from that Moment. and perceived with a fecret Pleasure that I had made no less Impression upon him. We fpoke on feveral Things as we went along, and each of us fludying to show Wit in what we faid, we arrived at our Houses charmed with one another.

I asked the Count to see my Mother, that the might thank him for his Civility, and fent her directly Word of this Vifit, to which he confented without much Pressing. My Mother received him honourably as a Person whom she knew, and having asked by what Accident she had the Pleasure of seeing him, he confessed the Defire he had long entertained of being acquainted with us, and of the bold Step he had taken to accomplish it; humbly begging that she would give him Liberty to pay us sometimes his Respects.

d

1

it'

1ed

ır

ot

m.

W

I have for feveral Years, answered she, withdrawn myfelf from all Company, and my House is shut against Persons of Rank and Distinction, my Situation not permitting me to receive them. If my Daughter joined a Fortune to her small Share of Charms, Solitude would not be her Fate; but possessing

03 nothing

nothing except Virtue and Beauty, I am forced to conceal the one in order to preserve the other. A Cavalier of your Age and Merit would do Honour to her Charms, but it would be dangerous to her Reputation, if he had alone the Privilege of seeing her; Don't therefore find it strange that I refuse an Advantage, which, in another Condition, I would purchase at any Rate.

I don't require that my Daughter should shun you, nor that you should avoid the Occasions of speaking to her, provided it be not too often. Persons of Quality cannot have too much Regard for one another; I'm for a solid not savage Modesty; but there are Situations in which People cannot be too cautious,

THE Count de Mirelle appeared to be very much concerned at this Refusal, and could not even smother his Sighs; however his Answer was respectful, and without blaming her Rigidity, he made her understand that his Conduct should be such as to engage her to grant what he so ardently desired, and then retired that he might not be troublesome.

stenied without numb Prefling

I could not, I own, see him go out without Concern, which he perceived, and, by his Looks, assured me that he selt no less. A gloomy Melancholy seized on my Heart when he was gone, and as I was ignorant of the Art of Dissimulation it soon appeared in my Countenance.

THE

ti

fe

V

h

m ov

pli

for

VO

up

inf

THE Marchioness was too clear-sighted not to penetrate into the Cause, but, more artful than I, she seemed to take no Notice of it; she even passed the Remainder of the Day without speaking of the Count, whose Visit she looked upon as the Effect of Youth, and made no great Account of it; which augmented my Melancholy, imagining that her Resusal proceeded from a mean Opinion of him; but in the Evening, having called me into her Closet, and looking fixedly at me: Elisabeth, said she, what is your Opinion of the Count de Mirelle? Speak your Mind boldly, and depend upon my Friendship.

THESE Words accompanied with an Air to inspire me with Courage, calming at once the Trouble with which I was agitated, I confessed to her that this Gentleman pleased me very much. Do you believe, said she, that he has the same Sentiments for you? This Question made me blush, and casting down my Eyes: I know not as yet, Madam answered I, how to read into Hearts, I even have too much Difficulty to unravel what passes in my own, to judge easily of others.

1-

er

nis

10

nen

ith-

A

hen

the my

THE

I know it for you, my dear Elifabeth, replied she, but I shall not lose Time in Lesfons which you're now in an Age to give yourself; I will only give you a Caution upon the Conduct which you are to hold, inform you of my Sentiments, and who the

Count

Count de Mirelle is; no less than the only Son of the richest Nobleman of the Province, and the worst Man upon Earth, covetous, cruel and revengeful; but these Qualities would not be much to be dreaded, if he did not conceal them under the Appearance of Honour and Probity, which deceiving those whose Rank and Imployment make them his Superiors, have made them so much his Friends, that he has but to ask and receive any Favour at Court, which renders him an Enemy as dangerous as formidable.

His Son, on the contrary, is strictly virtuous, and is grieved at the Bottom of his Heart to have a Father of this Character: but his Merit does not hinder his Dependance on him, and you may eafily judge by the Picture that I have drawn of him, that he will never confent to his Son's marrying a Girl without Fortune; however, as fuch Matches do not always offer, and that the young Mirelle has not long to wait till he is Master of his Estate, of which the Father cannot deprive him, it being substituted; I am of Opinion that we ought to make much of him, if he really loves you as I am apt to believe he does, from the Report of your old Governant, who has observed that he follows you, and has been endeavouring to fpeak to you for more than a Month; he will not fail to declare himself, and I shall then endeavour to take fuch just Measures that I shall have nothing to dread from his Father: It is for this Reason that I refused his Visits here, which

a

f

ti

tı

n

ir

O

cl

an

he

ch

the

Pic M

Re

mit

tha pug

but

which would alarm the old Count, and oblige him to Iay his Commands on the Son not to come near the House, the Consequence whereof would be the Miscarriage of my Projects; whereas in not coming here, and only speaking with you by Chance, I shall feed the Son's Flame without giving the Father any Suspicion, and by this Means succeed to make him your Husband. The only Thing which I require of you is that you'll conceal nothing of the Conversations which you may have with him, and that you'll be directed by my Prudence.

I thanked the Marchioness for her Goodness, and begged she would believe that, notwithstanding the Inclination I had for the young Mirelle, I would still govern it by her will, to which I would intirely fubmit, and punctually follow her Orders. From that Day not one passed without my finding the Count in my way, and without his finding, fome Opportunity of speaking with me. He declared his Passion in the most respectful Terms, and conjured me not to oppose the Design he had formed of asking me from the Marchionefs. She had too well informed me of the old Count's Character, and had drawn a Picture of it too hidious to have escaped my Memory. I answered the Son with as much Referve as my Affection for him would permit, that his Addresses did me Honour, and that I should obey my Mother without repugnance, if they were agreeable to her; but at the same Time told him that I apprehended

e

S

1

n

of

2-

ld

WS

to

ail

ur

ve

for

re,

ch

prehended less Obstacles from her, than from his Father, not imagining that the Count de Mirelle would approve of his Choice.

IT is true, faid he, that I have no great Hopes of my Father's Confent, and as our Sentiments are fo very different in all Things, I don't flatter myself they will agree in this; but if you approve of my Flame, and that the Marchioness does not oppose it, I have fure Means of accomplishing what will make me happy, without paternal Authority, I reiterated my Confent, and we parted in the joyful Hopes that Heaven would favour our Defires. I gave my Mother an Account of this Conversation, she appeared to be pleased with my Exactness, and puzzled her Brain to find out in what Manner the young Count proposed to have no Occasion for his Father, in a Conjuncture where his Power was so neceffary; she could by no Means unravel the Mistery, but did not remain long in the The fame Afternoon of my Conversation with Mirelle, the Count de Salue your Father came to our House, and asked a private Audience of her. This Vifit furprifed Madam Durnant the more that she knew him to be a near Relation of the old Count de Mirelle and his Heir, if his Son happened to die without Issue, and for that Reason it was his Interest to prevent as much as possible the young Gentleman's entring into the Young matrimonial State.

However of H

r

n

h

fe

en

ex

ani

Ih alto

the

the

de Wo

ted

no 1

oon

peal

re i

le A

of th

ence

of m

However as she knew him to be a Man of Honour, and of a quite different Character from his Kinsman, she received him with great Distinction. You know, my dear de Saluce continued she, that he was the most gallant well bred Gentleman alive, he told me a great many obliging Things upon the Necessity he was under of begging I would retire, while he was entertaining the Marchioness in private, protesting that to indemnify him for the Grief which this Moment's Abfence would give him, it should be wholly employed in speaking to her about me.

THE open and frank Air with which he expressed himself, having made me easy, I answered him in the same Tone, and when I had faid enough to prove that I was not altogether unworthy of his Attention, I left them alone, uneafy, I must confess, about the Subject of this Conversation. As Madam de Durnant recounted it to me Word for Word, and that the Count de Saluce repeated it to me several Times, I shall be under no Difficulty of relating it to you. I was no coner gone out than the Count beginning to peak: I believe, Madam faid he, that you ire not ignorant of my Relation to the Count de Mirelle, but you are not perhaps informed of the extreme Affection I have for his Son: Young as he is, and notwithstanding the diffeence of his Age and mine, he is the dearest of my Friends, and I ask no other Favour of Heaven, than to see a Son, whom it has bestowed

t

e

1.

28

d

i

W

nt

ed

it

fi-

he

bestowed on me and who is only four Years old, refemble him.

AFTER this Declaration, Madam, you will not think it strange that, laying aside my own Interest, I wish to see him tied with the Bonds of Matrimony, and that I ask you, for him, Mifs Durnant in Marriage: he loves her, but with that Ardour which characterifes the constant Lover, when Esteem is the Foundation of the Passion, and when he who feels it reasons judiciously upon the Consequences of his Choice, in which Case it is needless to oppose it; therefore as the only Obstacle that might be objected to the young Mirelle, could only be a Motive of Interest beneath a generous Mind, and as he will possess a Fortune fufficient for his Wife and him, I have not hesitated to commend him for the Pleasure which he finds in making your Daughters Fortune; but that you may have nothing to object, and as I am very much perfuaded that we can not procure his Fathers Confent, I come to propose a private Marriage to you, tho regular and in good Form; my Notary, in whom I can confide, shall extend the Contract, my Brother and, I the only Heirs to the Count's Estate by Substitution shall sign it. Our Confent is preferable to his, fince he could not oppose this Union but upon Account of the Estate which we are Masters to dispose of as we think proper. The Ceremony of the Marriage shall be performed in my Parish Church, where I shall serve my Friend as a Father and a Witness, and in

f

ai

f

hi

ar

th: de

int

me

pui Tr

Pec

#### Mademoiselle de Richelieu.

157

this Manner we can manage Things fecretly, 'till Age renders him his own Master, and avoid the Transports and Caprices of the old Count de Mirelle.

Your Father here left of speaking, and Madam Durnant not at all willing to lose a Match of this Importance, and seeing herself safe by the Consent of a whole Family capable to support her in Case of Need, gave her Consent, testifying a grateful Acknowledgment of his generous Procedure; and when they were agreed in every Respect, I was called in and informed of their Resolution.

THE Count de Mirelle had got too far into my Heart to oppose his Happiness in what made my own. It was therefore concluded that in the Night of the third Day from this, my Mother and I should set out for the Castle of Saluce without Retinue, and that the next Day the Count de Mirelle should tell his Father that your's had invited him to go and pass some Days with him, and that he should come there openly with your Uncle; that after the Marriage my Husband should never come to our House; that our Meetings should be at the Count de Saluce's, who alone should be admitted into our House to speak to me or to give me my Husband's Letters. All this was punctually executed and without the least Treachery. As our unhappy Situation made People take but very little Notice of our Vol. I. Actions.

0

at

1

u,

n-

to

ign

nce

Ac-

s to

mo-

1 in

my

1 in

this

Actions, it was easy to conceal our Absence. my Mother having ordered that it should be given out, whoever came to call for her, that she could not be seen, upon Account of my having taken the small Pox.

WE went to Saluce Caffle where the Count received us as a loving Father: You was at that Time there about four Years old, and it was then the tender Friendship began, which I shall while I live have for you, You had loft your Mother abour a Year before, fo that the Count was intirely free at his own House. My dear Mirelle and the Marquis Dantin his Uncle did not fail to join us; and without enlarging my Narration by a needless Detail, I shall only simply tell you that our Marriage was celebrated as it had been projected, and that the Secret was fo perfectly kept, that no Mortal but those who were Witnesses ever knew any thing of it, We passed three Weeks at Saluce with infinite Pleasure; your generous Father made me magnificent Presents, and gave me then visible Marks of that furprizing Probity which he professed, and of which I have fo well felt the Effects. Town bluggli, barel

My Husband and the Marquis Durnant made now and then Trips to Riom to prevent Suspicion, and we at length returned to it without any Accident. The Count de Saluce visited me regularly every Day, and as it was publickly known that the young Mirelle supped and lay at his House for the most Part

fince

u

10

p

ec

fo

W

mi an

T

fince he was a Widower, he continued so to do that he might have an Opportunity of seeing me often without Fear. we had concerted Measures so well that every Night going to a Back-Door of your Father's House, of which I had the Key, I passed into an Apartment reserved for me without being seen by any Body where I slept with my Husband.

Six Months were fcarce passed in this Manner when I perceived that I was with Child. This News charmed the Count de Mirelle, but alarmed my Mother upon Account of the Difficulty of concealing the Birth of this Child; however, the Time not being yet come, their Thoughts were only taken up about my Preservation. I went out so seldom that no Change was perceived about me.

In this Interval of Time the Marquis Dantin having lost his Wife, was obliged to go to Paris, where having died a few Days after his Arrival, the Count de Saluce was under a Necssity to go thither, in order to look after the Affairs of his Brother, for the Sake of the young Marquis Dantin his Nephew, a meer Child, whose Tutor he intended to be. I cannot express our Grief at his Departure, my Husband and I were inconsolable; and though he affured us that he would not be absent above a Month, certain misgiving Thoughts made us look upon it as an Age: I was the more afflicted as the Term of my Lying-in approached; and that

.

e

n

h

ant

ent

it

uce

was

up.

nce

the War being declared, the Count de Mirelle. Colonel of a fine Regiment, was obliged to join it without Loss of Time. Nevertheless, there was a Necessity of yielding to our Fate.

THE Count de Saluce took his Leave, and begged of us to use much Precaution and Prudence in our Interviews till his Return; but it seemed that Paris was fatal to the two Brothers, after three Weeks Residence in it, the Count fell dangerously ill. Judge of our Inquietude, that of my Mother upon my great Belly augmented; and to complete my Miffortune, one Day as I was coming out of the Church, having no Body with me, a Crowd having hindered me to pass,, I found myself between two Coaches, one of which was the Count de Mirelle's, and he himself in it with his Son.

My Husband, terrified with the Danger that I was in, ordered the Coachman to ftop, and by this Attention obliging the old Count to look at me, he asked his Son if he knew me; he answered no, but that he thought the fame Civility was to be used with Persons unknown as with Friends, adding, that he believed I was the Marchioness de Durnant's Daughter; upon which the old Count opening himself the Coach Door, begged that I would come into it. My Husband got directly out, took me by the Hand, and fqueezing it gently, made me comprehend that

fo

th

th

D

fee

and

tha

Per

it,

# Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 161 that he inclined I should accept of his Father's Offer.

I used the usual Ceremonies upon this Occasion; but the old Count pressed me so much, that I placed myself at his side, my Husband placed himself opposite to me, and we both of us acted our Parts so well that the old Man had no Suspicion of our being acquainted; but, running out in Encomiums upon my Beauty, and in Complaints that Madam Durnant reserved for herself alone such a valuable Treasure, he discovered a vast Desire of being better acquainted with her: As I only took what he said for meer Compliment, I answered him in the same Strain, and in such a Manner as to give him a savourable Opinion of my Wit.

He carried me home, alighted out of his Coach, gave me his Hand, telling his Son to go home without him, and that he would foon be with him, and with an Air of Liberty that furprized me, conducted me to my Mother's Apartment, complimented her on the Happiness of being Mother of so charming a Daughter, and begged that she would suffer him to share sometimes in her Happiness.

ıt

15

-9

t's

n-

I

di-

nd

end

hat

MADAM de Durnant was so astonished to see the old Count de Mirelle at her House, and to know that I had returned in his Coach, that she scarce durst speak. I observed her Perplexity and hastened to draw her out of it, by relating what had happened to me,

P3 affecting

affecting to have but a very flender Knowledge of those who had done me this Civility.

THE Marchioness then conceived that the young Count had thought proper to lay Hold of this Opportunity of making me known to his Father; and in this Thought gave him a most obliging Reception, thanked him for the Favour he had done me, and told him that notwithstanding the Resolution she had taken to see no body, his Visits would always be acceptable. The old Gentleman was charmed with this Permission, said a great many slattering Things to me, and went away fully resolved not to be a Stranger.

I was at a Loss to judge whether I had Reason to be pleased with this Adventure: I had perceived that the old Count looked at me with Eyes that expressed more than common Sentiments; and the Manner in which he had ordered his Son to be gone had so shocked me, that I was very much alarmed.

I saw my Husband the same Night, who distipated my Fears, by telling me that it was the greatest Happiness which could happen to us, that his Father sound me agreeable, by which Means he was persuaded we would advance our Affairs: I did all I could to believe him, but a sew Days after we had Reason to know that our Hopes were very ill sounded.

THE

2

it

0

th

da

T

THE old Count did not let a fingle Day pass without coming to our House where he made very long Visits; and, as my Belly became so big that I could no longer appear with Decency, his Presence began to importune us terribly, and my Mother and I were plodding how to get rid of his frequent Visits, when he rendered us one from which springs the Source of my Missortunes.

I come, faid he upon entering to intreat, that you'll make but one House of yours and mine, by accepting of me as the Hufband of this fair Lady your Daughter, whom I paffionately love; I have imployed feveral Days in examining her; I have duly reflected upon this Alliance, and have found that I could not make a better Choice to pass agreeably the Rest of my Days. My Son has an Estate independent on me, fo that I shall do him no Injury; and moreover, I am accountable to none but myfelf for my Conduct, and what I think proper to do. I can't allow myfelf to think, continued he, that you'll refuse such an Advantage: if my Age be an Obstacle to it, my Fortune destroys that Difficulty, and ought to determine you to accept of it.

10

25

to

d-

e-

22-

ill

HE

This Proposal appeared so terrible to me that it made me turn pale as Death: Madam Durnant trembled in every Joint, but mustering up all her Courage to conceal her Trouble: None can be more sensible than

Ι,

I, said she, of the Honour you do me, and it is with the greatest Grief that I am forced to refuse it; my Daughter is promised, and I am speedily to set out for Lyons, where her intended Husband waits for her.

This Evasion came directly into her Thought as the most capable to put a Stop to the Count's Project; but the old enraged Lover answered, that she might very well break her Word in savour of such a Man as himself, and asked the Name and Quality of the Person whom she preferred; the Marchioness excused herself, by saying that she was tied up from making a Discovery till after the Celebration of the Marriage. The Count de Mirelle turned surious at this, and starting up with Transport, threatened her that he would find Means to break this Marriage, and to be revenged of an injurious Refusal.

My Mother who wanted to bring him to Reason without provoking him, did all she could to soften him, by protesting that she never would have come under any Engagement, had she in the least imagined that he would have had any such Thoughts; and to convince him that she would think herself happy to have him for her Son-in-law, she begged he would allow her some Days to think of some Method of disengaging herself. The Count answered that he would give her eight Days; but if, after that, she did not confent to unite me to him, he would make her repent

ar

ar

yo

kn

Wa

an

app

me

# Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 165 repent in a terrible Manner, upon which he went out leaving us in a very strange Situation.

HE had no sooner left us than I gave a free Passage to Tears that were ready to stifle me. Madam Durnant was not much less affected than I, but more courageous, she directly came to a Resolution.

Our Business is not to take up our Time with needless Regrets, said she, but to think of skreening ourselves from this Man's Violence, he is not of an Age that renders Love Proof against Absence. The Count de Saluce not being here, Flight is the only reasonable Thing we can determine upon. The Time of your Lying-in approaches, which must be concealed.

I have really Business at Lyons, which Want of Money always hindered me from ending, there we must go. Unknown in that Town you can be safely brought-to-bed, and without Apprehension of a Discovery; and as it is in your Husband's Way to join his Regiment, he may easily come and find you. We will change our Name, live unknown, write to the Count de Saluce, and wait for his Return to appear again at Riom, and conduct ourselves by his Advice.

0

f

e

k

nt

1-

er

nt

I found this Expedient so judicious that I approved of it directly, and nothing troubled me but my Husband's Consent; but a Conference

ference which he had with his Father disposed him to every Thing we proposed; we faw him that Night, and told him the Motive of the old Gentleman's Vifits; and he told us that he had come home with fuch visible Melancholy in his Looks, that with a View to diffipate it, and not knowing that he had but just left us, he had proposed to make us a Visit, begging that he would prefent him; that upon this Proposal he had been transported against him in a surprising Manner, forbiding him absolutely to go near us; adding, that I was to be his Wife, and that he would have Opportunities enough to render me his Respects as his Mother-in-law; that these Words had confounded him, and that he had waited with the utmost Impatience for the Hour of our meeting, to know the Trath of what he had told him. Here is an Accident, continued he, which I never should have expected, I fee all the Confequence of it, and I make no doubt but that, in this Occurrence, if the Count came to discover our Union; he would leave no Stone unturned to ruin you.

i

A

tl

m

W

de

w. an

toda

Ro

We

cou

tha

IF the Count de Saluce were here I should be more easy, but his Absence forces me to consent to yours: My Father has allowed you eight Days to give your Answer; leave this Place To-morrow, and give Orders that he may be refused Admittance during that Time, as if you were at home, but resolved to receive no Visits, and this with a Design to prevent his following you before you have reached

### Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 167

reached Lyons; I will take Care to provide every Thing necessary for your Journey, and join you before 'tis long.

THE poor Count de Mirelle was under fuch an Agitation that we could easily obferve the Effort he made to conceal a Part of his Fears. We promised to execute whatever he desired: My Mother, who had accompanied me that Night to speak to him, was Witness to our Adieus: Alas! they were too moving not to be ominous of suture Disasters. The Count gave my Mother an Order to take what Money she wanted from the Count de Saluce's Notary, and we parted with a terrible Load of Grief.

MADAM Durnant employed the next Day in preparing for our Journey, and in the Middle of the Night we went to the Coach that was to conduct us to Lyons. We found my Husband there in a poor Man's Habit, who under Pretence of getting Charity, rendered us all the Services which Women without Domestics might have Occasion for; and having seen us set out, he retired. We took sictitious Names, and remained masked during the whole Journey.

.

d

e,

ne

in

ıld

to wed

ave

that

that

lved

efign

have

As nothing extraordinary happened on the Road I shall say but little about it, only that we arrived at Lyons without any bad Rencounter, and lodged at a Midwise's, judging that I should soon have Occasion for such, and that we would be safer there than any where

else, these Sort of People being accustomed to Secrecy upon such Adventures.

I wrote to my Husband directly where we lodged, and what new Names we had taken: and by his Answer we were informed of his Father's Rage, when, at the Expiration of the eight Days, he understood that we were no longer in Auvergne, and that no Body knew where we were gone; that he however fufpected upon what my Mother had told him. but that he durst not undertake the Journey on the Uncertainty he was under; that as for himself he would set out the next Day after the Date of his Letter, and reckoned to be with us as foon as it, and he was as good as his Word, for he arrived a few Minutes after I received it, without Attendants or Equipage, having fent all to the Regiment that he might have no Spies upon his Actions. Our Joy at meeting was inexpressible, and mine was fo excessive that it brought my Pains upon me.

THE Count could not think of leaving me a Moment, and it was in his and my Mother's Presence that I brought this Silvia to the World who is so dear to you, and whom I so tenderly love. My Husband ordered the Midwise to take the two first poor Persons she met with to stand God-sather and God-mother, to have her baptized by the Name of Silvia, and as a Foundling whom she intended to take Care of: All this was performed; but three Days after this Ceremony,

b

f

h

W

gi

m

ing

tru

posi

eafi

mu

ing

it;

as he was croffing the Square called Belle-Cour in the Evening, muffled up in his Cloak, he perceived his Father a few Paces diffant from him which greatly alarmed him, and haftened him to our Lodgings: My dear Elizabeth, said he, the Count de Mirelle is in Town, it's impossible that he can discover you, but me he would, should I remain any longer; fo that I must be gone this very Night, however as you could not eafily put my Daughter to Nurse and bring her up without risking a Discovery of our Secret, I will put her with a thousand Pistols into fure Hands, I don't remember the Person's Name to whom I defign to address myself, but I know him tho' he does not me. faw him just now going into a House, I will go and wait his coming out, follow him home, terminate my Affair with him, that Moment take Post, and the Minute I arrive at the Regiment I shall write you his Name, what he is, and where he lives; and I here give you a Paper with which you can retire Silvia, in case some Accident should prolong my Absence.

15

ne r's

he

In

the

The od-

ame

in-

per-

ony,

I strenuously opposed this Design, not being able to part with my Daughter, and to trust her to a Stranger; but the Count was positive, and perceiving that my greatest Uncasiness proceeded from his not knowing so much as the Name of the Person he was going to seek, he confessed at last that he knew it; but fearing the Indiscretion of maternal Vol. I.

Love, he resolved to keep me in the Dark 'till the Count de Saluce returned, having absolutely resolved not to acknowledge Silvia for his Daughter 'till our Marriage could be declared. Madam de Durnant, who, notwithstanding her Courage, trembled for fear that this Child should discover the whole Intrigue, took Part with him, and forced me to yield.

THE Count then taking a Pen in his Hand wrote a Letter which he afterwards cut in two equal Parts, of which he kept one half, giving me the other, and having tenderly embraced me took my Daughter in his Arms and left me in a pitiful Condition by the sudden Departure of two Persons so dear to me. I was a confiderable Time before I got the better of this Seperation, which very much retarded my Recovery, during which Madam de Durnant only went out in the Night Time for Fear of meeting with the old Count de Mirelle; she even saw him several Times near to our Lodgings, but she took such Care to conceal herfelf that he could not possibly discover her.

In a little Time I left my Bed, and was foon in a Condition to take the Road back to Riom, tho' very much alarmed at having no Letters from my Husband; we received however from the Count de Saluce wherein he wrote us that he was intirely recovered, and that he was going to fet out Post for Lyons, in Order to free me from the Transports of my old Lover, which made us refolve to

wait

1

b

to

fe

E

of

D

of

us.

M

ing

is

Ou

## Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 171

wait his Arrival that we might have his Company to Auvergne.

I had informed him of all our Steps, and of my Uneafiness about my Husband: He likewife knew that my Father-in-law was at Lyons, and we could do no better, in our present perplexed Situation, than to follow his Advice; at Length he arrived and came streight to our House. I could not hinder myself from shedding Tears upon his first Appearence, he seemed to be under some deep Melancholy, I felt a sudden Damp upon my Spirits and asked him hastily if he had not heard from my Husband, and what was the Caufe of the Melancholy which I observed in his Countenance; he answered, with a Composure which cheared me up a little, that my Husband had not wrote to him, but that he knew by others that he was in good Health; that he had found fo much to do about his Regiment that he had no Time to think of any thing elfe; that as for himfelf, what I took for Melancholy was the Effects of his Indisposition and the Fatigue of his Journey.

I endeavoured to believe him, and changing Discourse my Mother and I informed him of the Particulars of what had happened to us, and of our Fears from the old Count de Mirelle's remaining so long at Lyons, not doubting but that it was upon our Accounts. There is nothing more certain, said he, but you ought not to be assaid of him since I am here

as'

to

no

N-

he

nd

ns,

to

vait

Q 2

too

too: I shall inform you to Morrow of what's to be done to prevent great Missortunes; in the mean Time get your selves ready to leave this Place in three Days, the Intendant is my intimate Friend, he will lend me a Coach, and I am resolved not to leave you a Moment.

I am very forry that your Husband did not tell you in whose Hands he put your Daughter, because I would have taken Charge of her myfelf, he will perhaps foon let us know, and we can always come and demand her. After which pretending some Business he left us, promising to return early next Day. Madam de Durnant remained for a Moment alone with him in a kind of Antichamber, and when the returned I obserwed her Eyes dim with Tears: My Trouble augmented, and I conjured her to tell me what paffed; she wanted to persuade me that I was alarmed without Cause, but her Countenance belying her Words, I threw myfelf at her Feet, and pressed her in such a Manner that not being able to withstand my Sollicitations: Well, well, faid the, your Husband is dangerously sick, and that is just what troubles the Count de Saluce and me, and what we did not care to tell you.

AH 'tis done, cried I, the Count is dead, and I am undone. The Marchioness made no Answer but with Tears, which confirming my Suspicions, plunged me in the nost

W.

7:

most terrible Dispair; my reason abandoned me, and I wanted to kill myfelf, I was deaf to every Thing, Duty, Respect, Religion, all were forgotten in this fatal Moment. I passed twenty four Hours in this Condition, Madam de Durhant, my Nurse, and our Landlady employing in vain all their Eloquence to calme me; my Torment was too violent to be laking, I funk under it, the Fever feized me, and from the first Moment my Life was in Danger. od sout him none he had made ule of after our Re-

THE Count de Saluce finding me in too bad a Way to think of any Thing but my Conscience, Brought a Man of Merit to take Care of it; and having trusted to him; under a folerin Promise of Secrecy, every thing that regarded me, he begged he would use his best Endeavours to bring me again to the Use of Reason, which would facilitate the Cure of my Bodily Diftemper. formidable to me; that even his Love did not

t I

.

1.

14

ur

15

nd

ell

ad,

ade

·m-

the

nost

In effect, this holy Man applied himfelf in fo fervent a Manner, that he by Degrees rendered me more calm; and shewing me by Motives of Religion how far my Grief offended him to whom we ought to facrifice every Thing, he put me in a Condition of receiving the Affistance necessary to prevent my Deaths nint of movesbes your, stor yast the Circle you have a Child, in whatever

IT is incredible what Care the Count de Saluce took of me when I was out of Daner, and when he was affired that I should bestow Tears upon the Loss of my Huf-

band.

band, he informed me that he died suddenly upon his Arrival at the Place where his Regiment lay; that they had found feveral Letters of which a Packet had been made and transmitted to his Father; that some of them were from me; but as I had the Precaution of calling him Cousin, and of signing Durnant without adding Mirelle, he found Means to appeale the Fury into which the Correspondence that appeared by these Letters had put him, and that he would inform me of the Expedient he had made use of after our Return to Riom.

I was so indifferent about every thing, that I had no Curiosity upon this Article, and not believing that, after the Death of my Husband, I had any Thing to sear from his Father; since my Marriage was to be buried in eternal Silence, I answered Monsieur de Saluce that the Count de Mirelle was no longer formidable to me; that even his Love did not alarm me; and that by shunning his Presence he would forget me.

HE is more to be dreaded than you apprehend, answered he, Love with People of his Age, changes into implacable Hatred, when it is despised; not being able to possess what they love, they endeavour to ruin and destroy the Object; you have a Child, in whatever Place it may be we shall sooner or later find it out; and it is for the Sake of this Fruit of your Love, that you must endeavour to secuth

, Sersa

W

fe

7

451

Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 175
fecure yourself from the Count's Resent-

chilly and uneafy; but as I thought I had no THE Remembrance of my Daughter revived all my Misfortunes, and the Hopes that the Count de Saluce gave me of feeing her again some Time or other, determined me to be wholly directed by him. We left Lyons, as he had concluded, in one of the Intendant's Coaches, and returned to Riom. where the Count your Father, for Reafons which he promifed to communicate to us. infifted on our Lodging at his House. He had left at Lyons one of his Valet de Chambre's. in whom he confided, with the Half of the Letter which my Husband had given, to endeavour to find out those who had the other, and to take my Daughter out of their Hands, I had even long infifted not to leave Lyons till this Search was made; but he opposed this Delay, and forced me in a Manner to leave that Place, by affuring my Mother that we were not fafe in it, fo that I was obliged ito comply! regnol on I have it want felf but as the Opies of an unlawful Amour.

During the first Days after our Arrival at his House I seldom saw him, he went out very early and returned very late, and appeared to be employed in Business that gave him no Rest. My Mother and I eat by ourselves in my Apartment; and no Mortal being admitted to visit us, by the Count's partular Orders, we passed whole Days tete a

a friendly frage

e

e-

nis

en

hat

OY

ver

ind

to

feaure rounded from the Count's Refent-

THE Marchioness was extremely melancholy and uneafy; but as I thought I had no lefs Subject than the to be afflicted, I gave no great Attention to the Trouble with which she seemed to be agitated; and believing that the Reflections I made myfelf on my prefent Situation were the Caufe of it; I did not think it frange that the was affected by it. In Effect, I found myfelf Widow of a Man extremely rich without a Jointure, a Mother without daring to own it, and with out Hopes of leaving the least Fortune to my Daughter, nor the Confolation of bearing her Father's Name, in case I should happen at any Letter which my Hufbar, and bnil ot smiT endeavour to find out those who had the

Honour, Glory, Interest, and Self-love, were so cruelly shocked that it was impossible for me to be easy; and my Marriage appearing no longer to me but as an Engagement which wanted the necessary Formalities to render it good, I no longer looked upon my self but as the Object of an unlawful Amour, and as a Woman who could no longer appear in the World without Consustant. Such were my Thoughts, and which I believed to be my Mother's too, when after having been eight Days at the Count's House without once seeing him, the came into my Apartment.

Ca

Ca

ma

De

the

em

fitii

THE Obligations we had to him render's his Presence always agreeable: Is it posses, said I to him in a friendly Manner hat ke ving

knowing yourself to be our only Consolation, you should so long deprive us of your Prefence. We have every Moment since our being here received Proofs of your generous Attentions; but I own that their not being accompanied by your Presence diminishes much of their Value.

This obliging Reproach, Madam faid he, flatters my Heart more than you imagine, and I can make no better Return than by giving you effential Proofs that the Time I have passed without seeing you has been wholly employed upon your Account. But before I tell you what I have done I must inform you what Steps the Count de Mirelle has taken, which can no longer be concealed from you.

MADAM Durnant, whom I informed of every Circumstance, on Condition that she should not let you know the least Tittle of it for fear of augmenting your Grief, knows with what Zeal I have endeavoured to extricate you out of the most cruel Labyrinth that can be imagined.

e

ıy

ht

ed

9

g

THE old Count de Mirelle, continued he, mad at your Flight, and the Contempt of his Love, followed you to Lyons with no other Design but to be revenged; and as your Mother had told him that you was to be married there, the first Days after his Arrival were employed in seeking you every where, in visiting the Churches where the Ceremony of your

THON

your Marriage might have been performed, and going to all the Notaries where the Contract of Marriage might have been passed; but discovering nothing, and finding even none who knew you, he had Recourse to the Intendant, representing Madam Durnant and you as very irregular Women, against whom he had just Cause of Complaint, and who for bad Actions, which he would prove in Time and Place convenient, had fecretly made your Escape from Riom in Auvergne to come to Lyons, believing yourselves in Safety there, and demanded an Order to have you both taken up in case you could be found out.

THE Intendant, a Man wife and prudent, answered, that he could not come to such Extremities against Women whe were not under his Jurisdiction, without an Order from Court; that fince he had Proofs of what he alledged, he might inform the Minister, and procure a Lettre de Cachet, which he would without Difficulty put in Execution.

THE Count very much diffatisfied with this Delay, but fertile in wicked Contrivances, and fure of his Credit at Court, wrote immediately to one of his Friends to follicit this Order upon Accusations needless to rehearfe to you, and refolved not to leave Lyons till the Thing was executed, hoping fill to find you out. planed in fecking you every where, in vi-

A grade Charaches where the Ceremony of

10

to

M

pe

no

D

fpe

an 100

to l

pari

gag

er

nig

Your

W

IT was much about this Time that you informed me of his Love, and of your Uneafiness at Lyons, which your Husband confirmed, preffing me to return, because he was obliged to join his Regiment. As I was much better, and had finished my Affairs, I took Post some Days after for Auvergne, in hopes to find Mirelle, but instead of that I found a Letter from a Friend belonging to the same Regiment informing me of his Death. You know too well my Tenderness for him, to doubt of my Affiction at this News, which indeed was excessive; but judging that I became more necessary than ever to you, and that the old Count not being at home had followed you, I got into my Post Chaise and took the Road to Lyons coming straight to your Lodgings, being willing to know if you was informed of your Misfortune; and perceiving that you was ignorant of it, I faid nothing to you, but informed Madam de Durnant, begging she would be very circumspect in letting you know the dismal Story. and to assure you that I would never abandon vou.

h

er

at

er,

he

cu-

vith itri-

urt,

ds to

dless

leave

oping

In Reality your Situation appearing to me to be extremely cruel, and believing myself partly Cause by the Marriage in which I engaged you; I resolved to spare nothing to render you Mistress of the Fortune which you might have expected from your Husband, if your Marriage had been in due Form; but as it was impossible to bring about this by ordi-

nary

nary Means, having a Son and Nephew who are to share in the Count's Succession, I bethought me that the furest Way to succeed in my Design, and to fave you from the Profecutions of your Father-in-law, was to make you pass for my Wife.

FULL of this Idea, which I only reckoned to put in Execution after your Return to this Place, and not to communicate it to you till the Violence of your Grief was fomething abated, I went to the Intendant's that he might not reproach me of having been in Lyons without feeing him. As our Friendthip is almost dated from our Birth, and that in our Youth we went through all our Exercifes together, our Interview was reciprocally agreeable and friendly: Having conducted me into his Closet, by what Adventure, my dear Count said he, are you here? Is it the Count de Mirelle's Affair that brings you hither? And is it to that Madam de Durnant, who gives him so much Trouble, that I owe the Pleasure of seeing you at Lyons?

As I was as yet ignorant of the Count's Projects, I was extremely surprized at this Discourse, and asked him with a good Deal of Concern, if he knew Madam de Durnant, and what Affair it was he spoke of. How now, answered he, you are at Lyons and ignorant of your Kinsman's being here too. I know that he is here, anfwered I coldly, but I do not fee how that can interest the Lady whom you mentioned, and

t

e

d

ar

CC

to

to

de

bri

hir

and you will render me a material Service to

him in the greatest Fury against him for I fee very well, interrupted he that I have faid too much, but no Matter, you are too dear a Friend to conceal any Thing from you. particularly when you tell me you are concerned. After that recounting all that the Count de Mirelle had done against you and your Mother, not forgetting the Lettre de Gachet which he expected to have you arrested, he threw me into an Aftonishment which I cannot express; but taking my Resolution directly: What you tell me, answered I, deserves that I should put this old Fool to Death with my own Hand. Madam de Durnant is a Woman of Quality, in Reality poor, but who has not the less brought up her Daughter virtuously, and I was so well convinced of her Virtue and Modesty that I have made her Countess de Saluce. What replied the Intendant, quite confounded, this young Lady the Object of Mirelle's Accusation is your Spoufe! Yes, answered I without Hesitation. Reasons that you'll easily conceive forced me to conceal this Marriage; but Madam de Saluce having fent me Word that the Count de Mirelle was for forcing her to marry him, and that to be rid of him the was obliged to come and wait for me at Lyons, where I was to pass upon my leaving Paris, I took Post to come and join her, with an Intention to declare my Marriage, and by that Means bring the Count to Reason; after that, giving him a particular Account of his Visits and Vol. L R Threats

U

t,

NC

it's

his

eal

217-

oke at

eing

an-

ned,

and

Threats as you had informed me, and in short wholly displaying his Character, I put him in the greatest Fury against him for having attempted to impose upon him, so as to oblige him to expose Persons so respectable.

My dear Count, said he, be asraid of nothing, return to Riom with your Spouse, don't delay to render your Marriage publick, and I shall write to Court in such a Manner that the Count de Mirelle shall have no great Reason to be satisfied. I thanked him, and earnestly intreated that he would not let the Lettre de Cachet go out of his Hands, which he promised, and that it should be sent to me as soon as he had bassled the Count's Plots.

I agreed with him to leave a Valet de Chambre at Lyons to whom he might trust what he had to write or to send me, and having asked him the Use of a Travelling Coach, he readily granted my Request. This is, Madam, what obliged me to take you away so abruptly before you was perfectly recovered, and what made me bring you directly to my House, with a View to give more Authority to what I had advanced.

1

P

0

ir

Ы

af

in

Cr

for

As you was not then in a Condition to fupport a Discovery of the innocent Stratagem I had made Use of to secure you in a Jointure, and to protect you from the Effects of the Count de Mirelle's hatred, I contented

contented myfelf with publishing every where this pretended Marriage: the Town of Riom is full of it, all my Friends and the whole Ladies wait with Impatience the Moment of paying you their Compliments. Your Enemy wearied with Waiting at Lyons for the Order which he expected from Court, is returned; and the first News he heard upon his Arrival was his Son's Death and my Marriage with you. Less sensible at the Loss of the young Count, than surprized at our being united, and the Packet of Letters which had been fent him, making him believe that he would be revenged on you, by proving your Commerce with his Son, he fent Yesterday to beg I would grant him a private Audience.

I went to his House, and the Moment he saw me: Can I give Credit, said he, to what is reported, 'tis said you have wedded Miss Durnant. Nothing is more certain, answered I coldly, it is but sifteen Days since I declared my Marriage, but the Ceremony was performed sifteen Months ago at my Seat of Saluce, and you now see that it was not in her Power to accept of your Offer: He blushed at these Words, and was almost assamed to look at me: Why might she not have told me, replied he. I had sorbid her, interrupted I, your Son alone was in the Secret and punctually kept it.

d

e

14

fo

d,

ny

ity

ran a

Ef-

, I

ated

NEVERTHELESS, continued I, I am informed that there were Letters found about R 2 him

him from my Spouse, who having only figned the Name of Durnant, they had been fent to you, oblige me to return them, Madam de Saluce insists on having them, and I don't incline to let them remain in other Hands. I cannot represent the Count de Mirelle's Consusion in seeing by this all his Projects miscarried, he could scarce speak; but as he knows me, and that I am not a Man to be triffled with, he thought it was best to deliver them, telling me that you wrote too tenderly, and that he pitied me to have made such a Choice.

sweetlibe revenged on voc I am very well pleafed with it, answered I, but whatever may be in it, I shall not make Use of Lettres de Cachets to be revenged: and retiring after these Words I left him loaded with Shame and mad with Spite. My Valet de Chambre arrived Yesterday from Lyons with a Letter from the Intendant, which informs me that the Court incenfed at the Count's Artifices had forbid the Execution of the Order against you, which he has fent me barred and tore. He writes me also, that Mirelle will be called upon to give an Account of his Conduct, and of the Motive of his Accusations. This Victory obtained by my Care and Application, continued the Count de Saluce, making me hope that you would not dissaprove of the Cause, I refolved to inform you of it. probang bas too

I

C

2

rj

S

fo

ag

no

m

However, Madam, don't believe that in making you pass for my Wife, I will force

force you to be fo; I render myself Justice, and conceive eafily that a Heart filled with the Remembrance of a most lovely Husband, can have at most but Sentiments of Esteem for a Man of my Age: Had I found other Means of securing you in a Settlement, I would have preferred them to that of obliging you to pass your Days with me.

A blind Paffion did not fuggest them to me; as perfect a Friend as you can be a faithful Spouse, I have too great a Respect for the Memory of your Husband to become his Rival even after Death; the Friendship I had for him and your unhappy Situation have inspired me with them, and your Tenderness for him as well as what you owe to the Fruit of your Love, and the Care of your Reputation oblige you to take the Benefit of them; had I allowed you to keep the Name of Durnant you would have been constantly exposed to the Love or Hatred of your Enemy, and by letting him know that he is your Father-in-law, that Divine and Human Laws have confequently put an invincible Obstacle to his Wishes, he had a Right and would certainly have difanulled a Marriage contracted without his Confent, his Son not being in an Age to dispense with it; so that you must have been deprived of a Maintenance upon Account of your Marriage, and even I myfelf would be deprived of the Satisfaction of affifting you, as I could not lawfully favour a Stranger in Prejudice of my Son; but in marrying you, I can, with-R 3

b

,

n

re

d

ne

uc

V-

nat

ill

rce

thout doing him any Injury, make fuch a Settlement on you as will enable you to fupport your Rank after my Death, and to leave a moderate Fortune to your Daughter, if you fhould happen to find her out : During my Life I make your's easie, I remove your Uneafiness about your Mother's Fate, and I make her easy about your's: Motives so pressing ought to determine you to ratify the Report I have spread without the least Hefitation; and as my Son and Nephew, when at Age, would not be obliged to believe you upon your Word, that it is not fufficient that you and I verbally acknowledge our Marriage, and that there may be Authentic Proofs to prevent Disputes, I have caused draw up a Marriage Contract which I have figned, and which is going to be brought for your doing so too! After this we shall go to my Country Seat, where we' will be married very privately, and I will take Care that the Time of the Contract, and the Celebration of the Marriage, shall be conform to what I have given out; but I folemnly protest that I will not take the Advantage of the Right which fuch Ties may give me to your Possession, and whatever Happiness I may imagine to myself in the Enjoyment of so lovely a Spouse, I renounce all pretentions to it; my Design being only to serve you as a Father in becoming your Husband, and to require nothing of you but the Sentiments of a Daughter for her Father, which I refolve to be by Adoption. It is difficult my dear Count, continued Madam

### Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 187

de Mirelle, to express the Concern I was under during the Discourse of your generous Father.

THE Dread of the Danger to which I had been exposed by my Father-in-law's Artifices, the Joy of having escaped, the Surprize of passing in the Opinion of the World for Countess de Saluce, the Manner in which the Count designed to make my Fortune, and the indispensable Necessity I was under to accept of the Proposal, raised such tumultuous Thoughts in my Mind, that I was a long Time before I could come to any settled Refolution.

In fine, perceiving that he waited for my Answer: I must be, said I, the most ungrateful Woman upon Earth not to be fenfible of fo many Benefits; and I own that it is with great Grief I find myself incapable of acknowledging them with all the Tenderness they deserve. No, simple Friendship, how great Toever, does not reach to what they deferve, and it is, for my Misfortune, the only Recompence in my Power to make : your Age is no Obstacle to more tender and lively Sentiments: As that of my Husband was not the Motive of the Love with which he inspired me, and that it was alone owing to his excellent Qualities, those which you possess would produce the same Effect; were my Heart capable of loving any thing now, even Gratitude itself would contribute towards it; but I will not conceal from you

that the Count de Mirelle is imprinted in it in a Manner never to be defaced; I shall love him to the last Moment of my Life, I can love none else; my Eyes shall be perpetual Fountains, he shall ever be present to my Thoughts, and I shall preserve an inviolable Fidelity to him.

I fee but too plainly that it is for my Honour and Safety to accept of what you propose, and support what you have advanced, of which I know all the Consequences, and I am ready to do what you desire, but it is upon the Conditions that you have prescribed to yourself, that you will not endeavour to infringe them; that you will not reproach me for my Indisference; that you will be truly my Father; and that satisfied with my Attachment to you as a Daughter, you will never deviate from the Innocence which Titles so pure and sacred require.

I have already promised it, Madam said he, and the Motive which engages me to it ought to make you easy. Madam de Durnant entered as he ended these Words; she was informed of every Thing; and the Apprehension she was under that I should oppose this Design was the Cause of her Melancholy and Agitation.

h

fai

D

te

THE Count no fooner perceived her than he stept to meet her with a Joy visible in his Looks and Actions: Come Madam, said he, come and share in my Happiness, and let

let Death alone now separate us. The Marchioness judging by this Discourse that I had given my Consent, came and embraced me with Tears in her Eyes, Floods run from mine; and I dare assure you, that without the Desire of rendering her happy in her old Age, and to do for her what she had neglected to do for me; I should have, perhaps, rejected an Advantage which was to be purchased by such a Deceit.

THE Count's Notary arrived and read the Contract in my Presence, the Proofs of his Generosity appeared so visibly in every Line, that I could not find Terms to express my Gratitude: I signed it, Madam de Durnant did the same; and the next Day we set out for his Castle of Saluce, where the Count had told his Friends I was confined by an Indisposition.

As he had taken all his Precautions we were married next Night, which was for me the most terrible that I had as yet passed, by the Remembrance of my unfortunate Husband, upon seeing myself obliged to give my Hand to another in the same Chapel where I had for ever tied myself to him about sisteen Months before.

1-

1-

1-

is

nd

an

his

aid

and

let

1704.

But in fine, I found my Consolation in the noble Procedure of the Count, who, faithful to his Word, had for me from that Day the Tenderness of a Father, and the Attentions of a persect Friend. We returned

to

to Riom where I was vifited by the whole Town. The Count was fo generally effeemed, that there was no Person of any Note who did not think it their Duty to oblige me. I did my best to support, with a good Grace, the Title of his Spouse, and every body was deceived; the mutual Complaifance which we had for one another giving room to believe that there never was an Instance of stronger Love.

THE Count de Mirelle was the only Perfon who was grieved at this Marriage; he had been obliged to go to Court to justify himself, and had Difficulty enough to get out of the Scrape; but the Count de Saluce unwilling to profecute him, his Friends got Matters made easy with the Minister; fo that he was quit for the Trouble and Expence of a Journey, and the Shame of being univerfally despised.

HE did all that was in his Power to cut off the Intail of his Estate, but he could not fucceed; and fatigued with vain Endeavours to hurt us, he was forced to let us alone. When I faw all these Troubles at an End, I begged the Count to allow me to retire to Saluce. The Resolution he had taken never to constrain me made him consent.

I therefore left the Town of Riom with a Defign to return no more to it, and for the future to employ myfelf only in Piety and Devotion, and in your Education, which Your

m

fit

th T

ha

ma

an

your Father committed to my Care. the young Dantin brought there that he might be educated with you; and while I fent almost every Year to Lyons to discover if fome one or other did not complain of having an unknown Girl upon their Hands, who was a Charge to them, all my Study was to render the Marquis and you worthy of the Blood from which you fprang. I succeeded much better in this Design than in that of finding Silvia of whom I could hear no News. but the' the young Dantin possessed Admirable Qualities, tho' I loved him very much. and tho' he was as submissive to me as I could defire, yet you exceeded him so far in wit and Sentiments that you gained a superior Place in my Heart, perceiving that I had the Fondness of a Mother for you, I forgot nothing that might inspire you with the Sentiments of a Son for me; that when you had attained to the Age of Manhood. you might not be offended at what the Count your Father had done for me, well resolved to restore every Thing to you if my Daughter was not found.

t

ly

ut

not

urs ne.

, I

to to

ever

ith a

the

and

your

You answered to my Endeavours according to my Wishes, and you began to make me forget my Losses, when Heaven thought fit to bring them back to my Memory by the only Ones that could then affect me. That of Madam Durnant was the first, she had accompanied me in my Retreat, and made it highly agreeable by her Complaisance and Piety.

SHE

our Pather committed to my Cares SHE was feized with a violent Fever, and notwithstanding my Care and the Count de Saluce's who was almost always with me, died after a three Weeks Diftemper. My Grief was heavy, and the Count spared no Pains to comfort me, tho' he himself for some Months was opreffed with a Melancholy which nothing could diffipate. His Health was too precious to me not to have perceived it, and I had employed every Thing that I thought capable to divert him without fucceeding but at certain Times: However he had fuch a Command of himself the first Days after my Mother's Death, to oblige me to get the better of mine, that I flattered myfelf his Change of Humour had no effential Cause: He even fet out for Riom, where the Death of the old Count de Mirelle called him, apparently in fuch a Temper as to perfuade me I had been deceived; but he had fcarce terminated the Affair of this Succession, then he fell fick and fo dangerously, that, difpairing of Life, he dispatched a Messenger to entreat I would come and receive his last Sighs.

or safwered to car End You may judge what a terrible Blow this News was to my Heart; Esteem, Gratitude and Friendship, had made too deep Impressions upon it to lose him with Tranquillity ! I had found in him a Protector, a Benefactor, 1 Father, and a Friend, who had acquitted himself as such in so uncommon a Manner, that I did not imagine there could be any Happinel SHE

ŀ

C

b

tl

y

th

kı

Sa

m

# Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 193 Happiness for me in the World after his Death.

I went in all Haste to Riom, and my Prefence feemed to procure him some Ease, he ordered his Servant to retire, and begged that I would approach his Bed-fide, which I did drowned in Tears: Moderate your Grief Madam, faid he, whatever Satisfaction I may feel in knowing that my Loss affects you, I would not have your Remembrance of me to diffurb your Peace: It is now Time to finish my Career, and tho' the Load of Years were not to oppress me, I feel a Flame within me fufficient to abridge my Days; it would be shameful for a Man of my Age, and in another Condition than mine. to confess that Love has surprized him, and that Death is the Consequence of the Efforts he has made to conquer it; but I think fuch a Confession in this Moment is pardonable.

h

9-

de.

ce

if-

ger

laft

this

ude

ions

had

r, 1

itted

mer,

pinel

HEAVEN is my Witness that this Passion had at first no Hand in what I did for you, and that Compassion and the Remembrance of a Friend who was as dear to me as myself, were the only Motives; but, Madam, I had but a slender Knowledge of you then, I was a stranger to the Sweetness of your Temper, the Charms af your Wit, and the Solidity of your Virtue; the Experience I have made of them has proved fatal to me: Scarce did I know your Worth when my Liberty fell a Sacrifice to the most violent Passion which all my Reason could not conquer: Ah! how Vol. I.

could I, fince you augmented it every Moment; however, calling back my Reason, I concealed from you the Trouble of my Heart, I got the better of the Laws which might have authorised my Flame, to fulfil my Promises: A Husband without daring to be fo, I forced my Love to Silence, that I might not offer to your Presence but a Father and a Friend, perfuaded that under Names fo respectable I should gain your Affection; happy if I could have been fatisfied with that which they require; my Reason told me that it was fufficient for a Man of my Age, but Love demanded fomething more. I condemned it to Silence by way of Punishment, and it revenges itself on me by Death.

NEVERTHELESS I dare flatter myself that to acknowledge such a Sacrifice, not having been your Husband during my Life, you'll permit me to be it after Death, by leaving you Tutrix to my Son; deign still to be as a Mother to him, let your Care, Advice, and Wisdom hinder him from perceiving the Loss of his Father; and if in the Sequel he is worthy of your Confidence speak to him sometimes of a Man who dies your Slave.

d

t

F

W

to

to

in

or

D

My Astonishment and Grief at this Discourse may be better imagined than expressed; seized with Admiration, penetrated with Gratitude, and touched with a real Tenderness, I could only answer the Count with Sighs

Sighs and Groans. I threw myself upon my Knees before his Bed, took his Hands and watered them with my Tears, but could not pronounce one single Word; he appeared to be pleased with these triffling Caresses, and thanked me, saying he was sorry to have raised my Compassion to such a Height, and making a last Effort to embrace me, he expired in my Arms.

I gave a loud Shriek, upon which the People came running in, but found him dead, and me in a fainting Fit. It is needless to trouble you with the Effects which this Loss had upon me, and you may judge that Grief does not kill, fince I am still alive.

Y

nat

ng i'll

ing

e as

ice,

quel

z to your

Dif-

prefwith

Ten-

t with

Sighs

I had the Funeral Honours paid to this great Man, with that Magnificence which I thought incumbent upon me; the whole Town of Riom pitied my Despair; as it was sincere, and every body knew in what a cordial Manner we had lived together, without being let into the Secret of our Conventions, they had no Difficulty to believe but that I was terribly afflicted at the Loss of so dear a Husband.

His Last Will did not bely the Sentiments which he had for me, every Thing in it was to my Advantage, and my whole Study was to render myself worthy of so many Favours in my Care of your Education. You were only eight Years old then, and the Marquis Dantin something more.

S 2

I remained at Saluce during your Child-hood, where you had Masters agreeable to your Age. When you was in a Condition to perform your Exercises, I went with you myself to Paris with a Governor to each of you. I had the Satisfaction to see both of you succeed in what was taught you so as to be the Admiration of your Masters; and to experience that the Light of Reason which began to guide you diminished nothing of your Attachment to me.

However, the Blood that ran in your Veins not permitting you to be an idle Spectator of the War in which we were then engaged, I obliged you to go to the Army, where I made it my Business that you should appear with Magnificence; and while you distinguished yourself by acquiring Glory in the Midst of Dangers, shut up in the Castle of Saluce I passed my Days in offering up fervent Prayers to Heaven for your Preservation, and that it would pour down upon you as many Favours as I had received from your generous Father.

EIGHT Years slipped away in this Manner; and convinced of your Prudence and Discretion, and that I might without Risk put you in Possession of your Estate, without waiting for the Time prescribed, I gave up my Tutorship.

FROM

lo

th

th loc tha

pla

Ha

had

im

Far.

FROM that Moment I had a strong Desire to trust you with the Secret of my Adventures, and to let you not only know what the Count your Father had done for me, but even to make Restitution; but though I knew that you possessed as rare Qualities as his, and believed you to be as generous as he, yet the Remembrance of Silvia which never abandoned me, made me perceive so much Danger in discovering my Secret, that I resolved it should be buried till after my Death, making you my sole Legatee.

I wanted then to retire to a Convent; but you opposed it strongly, and pressed me so earnestly to remain with you, that I was at last forced to yield; which I did the more readily as I saw you averse to Marriage, and that I thought my Presence would be necessary to you while you remained a Batchellor.

11

n-

Y,

blu

OU

in

stle fer-

ion,

u as

ge-

Man-

Risk

ithout

ve up

FROM

My Example having given Emulation to the Marquis Dantin's Tutors, they gave in the Accounts of their Tutorship; and in looking over the Family Papers, having found that the Count de Saluce and his Brother had placed a considerable Sum in a Merchant's Hands at Clermont, named Dallon, which they had not retired, and for which they had only simple Notes, I thought proper that with the Family Titles and Dallon's Notes you should go to Lyons, to find out his Heir. You approved

proved of my Idea and fet out with your Coufin.

As you was going to a Place where I still hoped to find my Daughter, I was tempted a-new to trust you with the Secret of her Birth; but the Dread of your informing Dantin retained me, and I only gave your Valet de Chambre Orders to inform himself if there was not at Lyons a Girl named Silvia, who might be about nineteen or twenty Years old.

A little after your Arrival, he sent me Word that there was none in the whole Town of that Name but the Merchant Dallon's Niece, who was Daughter to his late Brother dead at Clermont, and the greatest Fortune in that Place after his own Daughter, with whom she had been brought up.

This last Information having made me lose all Hopes, and two Months slipt away without any Appearance of your Return, though in your Letters you gave me Assurances; I judged that the Daughter or the Niece of the Merchant had loaded you with Chains, and that one or other would make you lose your Aversion to Matrimony.

In this Thought, not willing that my Presence should be a Constraint upon you, nor to fail in the Promise I had made you not to enter into a Convent, I chose this Place for my Retreat, being near enough to Riom.

n in la

Riom, to see you when you should incline it. and remote enough fo as to be exempted from keeping too much Company, and under Pretence of defiring to leave the Name of Countess de Saluce to her whom you should make your Wife. I took that of Mirelle the Name of the Estate which your Father had affigned for my Jointure, making it a fecret Scruple to to bear a Title which was not my Due, and to leave one of which the Possession was what I might lawfully claim; but to give a Truce to the gloomy Thoughts that often came to difturb my Quiet in my Solitude, I intreated a Nun who attends the Hospital, and whom I love for her great Piety, to feek out for a proper Person to be my Companion.

ne

ole

alate

test

gh-

me

way

turn,

ffur-

with

make

at my

you,

le you

ofe this

Riom,

HEAVEN sent her this pretended Calista, and by an Inspiration which I can only attribute to Providence, she brought her directly to me. Alas! continued the Countess, I ought to have known her the very first Moment for my Daughter, by the Impulses of natural Affection, with which I felt myself seized at first Sight of her.

My Heart was under a strange Agitation; and charmed with her Beauty, Modesty, and tender Caresses, with which she answered mine, I placed my whole Happiness in having her with me, but the greatest of my Life lay still in the dark; your Return was necessary, my dear Count, to bring it to Light, and to give the finishing Stroke to my Felicity,

city, fince without the Transport of your Love I should still be ignorant that Califta is Silvia; and that Silvia, pretended Niece to Dallon, is my Daughter.

IT being my Fate to owe all the good Things I ever enjoyed in Life to your Family, I still preserved with great Care the Paper which my Husband left me, though without Hopes of its being useful to me. However, it must now be a Voucher for every thing that I have told you; after which, joining the two Parts of this Writing, she gave it to me, and in it I read what follows.



#### LETTER.

THE melancholy Necessity under which I am to conceal my Marriage, obliges me to do the same with regard to her who is the lawful Fruit of it; and as I am ignorant as yet into what Hands I am going to trust ber, and that my Design is not to reveal fo Soon the Secret of her Birth, to prevent the Misfortunes that may happen, this Letter shall serve to make her known in Time and Place, since in it I do declare that Silvia, baptized as a Foundling, without Father or Mother, is my Daughter; and that she who gave her Birth is my lawful Spouse, named Elifabeth

q

#### Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 201

Elisabeth de Durnant Countess of Mirelle, who is in Possession of the Half of this Writing; she alone can unravel the Mistery of it, in case my Absence or my Death should prevent my going myself to retire my Daughter.

#### The Count DE MIRELLE.

I had scarce ended reading, when I threw myself at the Countess's Feet, and by my reiterated Transports made her too sensible of my Joy, and the Admiration which her Virtue gave me, to doubt of my Love to Silvia, and of my Esteem for her.

WE all three tasted Pleasures then not easily to be described: The fair Califta divided between Nature and Love, gave loofe Reins to the former, in her tender Embraces to the Countefs, while the other sparkled in the Looks which she directed to me. Madam de Mirelle 'who resolved that her Pleasure should have no Mixture of bitter in it, commanded her to look upon me as a Man who was foon to be her Husband, and gave her Permission to show, without Constraint, how agreeable these Orders were to her; this alone, my dear Silvia faid she, can be a Sort of Return to what I owe to his illustrious Father; and fince he is willing to receive you as the Price, you cannot be too eager to acquit me.

to

as uft

fo

be

ter

ind

ia,

or

who med

eth

In fine, when we had given fufficient Time to the different Motions which this happy Event had excited, we confulted in what Manner we were to behave with the Marquis Dantin, of whose Marriage with Ismena I had informed them, as of the Difficulties which that tender Friend had made to be happy without Silvia, which gave great Hopes to Madam de Mirelle, that the would prevail with her Husband to confent that this Affair should be terminated to the Satisfaction of all Parties, she was of Opinion to keep Silvia's Birth a Secret, and to give her another Origin, to prevent the Noise of Things so surprizing; but I opposed it, and answering for the Marquis Dantin, as Silvia did for her dear Ismena, I told her that my Intention was to have her Marriage with the Count de Mirelle authentically acknowledged; and that, without discovering the Mistery of my Father's, the should truly appear Dowager of Mirelle and de Saluce, that the might possess the Rights of both without any Difficulty, fince on the Side of the Count de Mirelle there was no fuch Thing as disputing her Marriage, .fhe ought to make no Difficulty of declaring Silvia her Heires; and to facilitate this Matter, I would yield to the Marquis Dantin the Part of the Succession which would have belonged to him had the young Count de Mirelle died without Isfue.

I

V

d

G

ed

in

M wa

Sil

MADAM de Mirelle left me Master, to manage this grand Affair as I thought proper, and committed to my Prudence the Care of her own and her Daughter's Reputation; but we had no Difficulty in the Execution of our Project.

THE Marquis Dantin was arrived at Riom with his Spouse, and being informed that the Countess and I were at the Castle of Mirelle he took the Road to it three Days after Silvia's Birth was acknowledged, with a Design to present the new Marchioness to her.

As I was taking a Turn in the Avenue I was the first who received them, and the Meeting was joyful on both Sides; though Ismena and the Marquis were in deep Mourning for the Death of Dallon, upon which I made them Compliments of Condoleance, but with an Air of Coldness which persuaded them I had not as yet forgot their Treatment to Silvia, which obliged them to pass slightly over it, not to renew my Grief.

1

0

lle

h-

's,

elle

the

nce

ere

age,

this

Dan-

ould

at de

DAM

I told them nothing of what had happened, that I might have the Pleasure of surprizing them; and sending privately Notice to Madam de Mirelle of my Intention, she waited for them in her Apartment with Silvia, whom they had dressed out with

all

all the Ornaments that could add to her Beauty.

I conducted Ismena, now Marchioness Dantin, who advancing to falute the Counters, no sooner threw her Eyes on Silvia, than forgetting every thing: My dear Silvia, cried she, is it really true that you are still among the Living; and then no longer Mistress of herself she slew from the Counters into the Arms of that dear Friend, who received her with equal Raptures.

THE Astonishment of the Marquis Dantin was unconceivable, not because he saw Silvia alive but to fee her fo magnificently dreffed out, and with Madam de Mirelle. However, expressing as great Satisfaction in all his Actions as his Spouse, I thought I could not without giving him just Cause of Offence keep the Mistery any longer secret. Therefore, when the Exclamations, Tears, and Careffes were ceased, and that Madam de Mirelle had testified the Esteem she had conceived for the Marchioness from what Silvia had faid of her lovely Character; and that this Lady augmented it by the delicate Wit which the displayed in her Answers, I began to fpeak, addressing myself to the Marquis: M dear Dantin, said I, having sufficiently, think, proved my Friendship in my Appro bation of your Love to the virtuous Isment you will not, I hope, refuse me yours favour of Silvia, and that you'll fee be Countels of Saluce with as much Satisfaction

f

OIN

th I

Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 205 as I had to see Miss Dallon Marchioness of Dantin.

IT would be finning against the Ties that bind me to you, answered he, to make the least Doubt of it, Ismena and I never desired any Thing more ardently: The Miffortune and pretended Death of Silvia were the only Things that disturbed our Happiness. we would have even purchased, with a Part of our Fortune, the Pleasure we now enjoy, and to convince you that it is so, we only come to acquaint you that Dallon declared, when he was dying, that she was a Woman of Quality; that the young Man who committed her to his Care was her Father, and that notwithstanding his Disguise, and the Mistery he had made of his Name, his noble Air and a thousand Pistols, which he had given with the Child, were Proofs that he was rich and a Man of Quality. Had Silvia actually perished, we should not have ventured to declare what I have now told you, left by fo doing we should have renewed your Despair; but since Heaven has reflored her to us, and that by this News we only augment your Happiness, Ismena and I conjure you to render it perfect by a speedy Marriage, and to make some Reparation for the Injuries Mr. Dallon did the one and other. Ismena and I bestow, by Way of Portion, on the beautiful Silvia the Fortune to which she might have pretended as Daughter to his Brother, only begging by Way of Recompence that you will inform us by what hap-Vol. I. py

111-

aw

tly

elle.

all r

not

keep

fore,

arel-

Tirelle

eived

a had

t this

which

ran to

: M

itly,

Appro

Ismena

ours !

fee be

sfactio

py Chance she escaped the Fire, and how she happens to be here. The Sincerity that appeared in what the Marquis had said confirming me in my Design, I recounted to them Madam de Mirelle's Story, and informed them of the Birth and of all that happened to her charming Daughter; and my Narration threw them into an Astonishment which could not be compared but to the Excess of Joy which they felt at an Event so extraordinary: They embraced Silvia a thousand Times, and swore an inviolable Attachment to Madam de Mirelle,

Silvia and the Marchioness renewed the Assurances of their tender Friendship, admiring the Effects of Providence which having made them be brought up together as Relations, seemed to have decreed that, in the Sequel, they should really be so by Marriage. We all returned to Riom where Matters being adjusted to the Satisfaction of every one concerned, my Marriage with Miss Mirelle was celebrated, and she authentically acknowledged as sole Heiress to her Father, the Marquis Dantin having absolutely resused any Share in it.

S

n

n

pl

no

die

ou

fer

 $M_i$ 

Ey

ing Wit

wer

ult

act

urp

on

My dear Chevalier, said the Count, when I delivered him back his Manuscript, has this dong Story of my Spouse and my Amours given you any Satisfaction? I'm afraid, continued he, without giving me Time to answer, that the extraordinary Incidents will scarce gain Credit with you; but the they do in deed

deed seem a little odd, yet I can assure you that every Syllable is fact; and I do infift that you'll give your Opinion frankly and fincerely upon the whole Story. My dear Count, answered I, fince you lay your Commands upon me to speak my real Sentiments, I must obey you.

In the first Place, to make my Remarks in the Order that the Story is related, I think the Merchant Dallon did not at all answer to the Character that the World had of him, for his concealing the Money which was given him with Silvia by her Father, and reprefenting her to be a poor Child whom he had taken of out Pity, was base and villainous; his Daughter Ismena had Sentiments far different from his, and I cannot too much commend her noble and generous Character. What a glorious Example is laid down to the whole Sex in the noble and steady Friendship of the two Ladies; one the Master piece of Nature, without the least Tincture of Vanity, and preferring the real and permanent Beauties of the Mind to all the fading Charms that attract the Eye, such were the Sentiments of the charming Silvia, and the lovely Ismena contending with her Friend, that where the Sentiments were in every respect equal, Beauty had a ust Claim to the Preference, displays a Chafacter so amiable and engaging that I am not surprized your Cousin's Esteem was soon scarce converted into a real Passion.

.

g

S,

1,

ng

n-

N as

W-

ar-

any

hen

s this

ours

con-

fwer,

o in deel

T 2

THE

THE Countess de Saluce's Charms are such that 'tis scarce possible to withstand their sirst Attack; and if we join to this lovely Form her generous and delicate Sentiments, no Mortal can justly blame the Violence of your Passion, notwithstanding the Uncertainty of her Birth and Want of Fortune.

SOME will, perhaps, think that the ought not to have rejected your Offers of Marriage, fince the Knowledge of her Story made no Alteration in your Affection or Intentions, and will conclude that the was too fcrupulous upon that Point; but for my own Part, I admire the Delicacy of her Sentiments in voluntarily facrificing her own Happiness, rather than run the Risk of giving you, some Time or other, the Displeasure of being married to a Woman who perhaps was the Fruit of a criminal Commerce: This Part of her Story drew Tears from my Eyes, but very different from those that flowed from the Joy which the happy Discovery of her Birth gave me.

t

h

T

P

Co

tor

agr

ext

I don't think there can be an Instance brought of more noble and generous Sentiments than what your Father shewed with Respect to his Nephew's Widow; his Assection, 'tis true, for that unfortunate Gentleman might ingage him to protect her against the Persecutions of a provocked and cruel Father-in-law; but to die under the racking Tortures of a violent Passion rather than not keep

#### Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 209

keep up to his Promise, and not even to declare it, till he was upon the very Brink of Death, is a Greatness of Soul that sew Men are capable of, and must render his Memory dear to all Men of Virtue who happen to read his Story.

I here concluded my short Remarks; and the Count told me, fmiling, that fince he found I had so favourable an Opinion of Ifmena's Merit, he hoped I would think it worth my While to pay that Lady a Vifit in Auvergne, which was little or nothing out of my Way to Italy; adding, that the Country itself, so very different from all the other Provinces of France, both as to Situation and what it produced, deferved the Curiofity of a Traveller; and to engage me the more effectually, he proposed that his Lady and himself would make the Tour of Languedoc and Provence with me, and be my Guides through the Mountains of Auvergne, the Land of Milk and Honey. I shall, continued he, in eight or ten Days finish my Affairs here, and we will then fet out upon our Travels.

I

in

S,

ne

ar-

uit

her

ery

Oy

ave

nee

nti-

with Af-

ntle-

rainst

cruel

cking

n not

keep

Ir he had proposed six Months Stay in Paris I should have agreed to it, for I really could not think of parting with this lovely Couple, particularly since reading the History of their Amours; so that I readily agreed to the Proposal, and thought myself extremely happy in having the Pleasure of

T 3

their

their Company much longer than I expected.

As no Place in the World is so remarkable for odd Love Adventures, and indeed Scandal, as Paris, a Gentleman came to visit the Count when we were settling our Rout to Languedoc; he was one of those idle Sort of Folks who make it the Business of their Life to pry into all the little Tittletattle and Scandal of the Town, and then run about to tell it to whoever will hear them. Without any Preamble or Formality he up and told us as the News of the Day the sollowing Adventure.

A rich Mercer in St. Dennis-street has a Daughter, who, though sprung from a Race of Roturiers \*, despised every thing that was not noble; and the very Thoughts of a Courtaud de Boutique, i. e. a Shopkeeper, becoming her Husband, threw her noble Ladyship very often into Fits; nothing but a fine Gentleman with a Sword, a laced Coat, and a white Feather in his Hat, would go down with our Belle.

THE Chevalier de Menille, a Knight more famous for his Exploits in the Field of Venus than of Mars, or, to speak in plain Language, a Rake who makes it the whole Business of his Life to debauch heedless unthink-

<sup>\*</sup> Plebeians.

ing Girls, having by Accident seen Eliza, (the Name of the Merchant's Daughter) in a Church, ordered one of his Mercurys, of whom he had always two or three about his Person, to follow her home, and to bring him next Morning a distinct Account of her Name, Birth and Character, &c. which the Aid de Camp easily accomplished, by the powerful Influence of Half a Crown to the Merchant's Maid; and made a faithful Report to our Colonel (for you must know that he is second Colonel to the Regiment of Perigord) who soon formed his Plan.

As he had a pretty large Estate, and expended the greatest Part of his Yearly Income upon Projects of this Nature, he rightly judged that the laying out to the Value of a Hundred Pistols with the Mercer, would procure him free Access to his House as often as he pleased; and as he is a Man extremely active and cannot bear Slowness in the Carreer of Gallantry, he slew to the Merchant's Shop, where ask and have was the Word.

its

er,

ole

out

at,

go

nore

cnus

Jan-

Busi-

ink-

ing

THE Mercer concluded that his good Angel had fent him such a noble Customer, and thought he could do no less than invite him to Dinner; but our Colonel happening to be engaged that Day begged to be excused, and added that he would with Pleasure come and take Share of a Family Supper: So said, so done; the Mercer sent for the samous Fracin the Cook, and ordered him

to get what was delicate and nice; and Miss Eliza took Care to employ the whole Afternoon to fet off her natural Charms (which to speak the Truth are not at all contemptible) with all the Ornaments of Dress; for she resolved positively to make the Colonel her Slave, and he positively to make her something worse.

Well, they met, eat and drank heartily, stared one another out of Countenance, sighed every now and then, and made strong Love in dumb Shew. The Colonel, who was no Novice in the Trade, thought himself pretty sure of his Prize, and poor Miss made no Doubt of her Conquest.

THEY parted very good Friends, and in full Hopes; but before the Colonel went out he begged Permission to visit now and then the lovely Eliza, and made such a fine Compliment upon her Wit and Beauty, that the Mercer, as well as his Daughter, thought he was fairly in for it; and the old Fool fancied it would be a mighty fine Thing to have a Colonel for his Son-in-law, so recommended earnestly to his Daughter, who wanted no prompting, to be mighty complaisant.

THE Colonel returned next Day magnificently dreffed, had a tete a tete with Mademoifelle, declared his Passion with all the Symptoms of a Man deeply smitten, fell on his Knees, crossed his Hands over his Breast, looked languishing and filly, and begged she would

#### Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 213

would pity his poor distracted Heart. Miss blushed and held out for a While, but at last told him very fincerely, I do believe, that she wished all he said might be true. Here Monheur le Colonel called all the Gods and Goddesses to witness the Sincerity of his Flame, and fealed his Protestations with glewed Lips to Miss's fair Hand, which she, poor Girl, had not Strength, nor I fancy Inclination, to retire: Thus they went on for feveral Days, during which the Colonel acted the perfect Lover with fo much Dexterity, that poor Miss was over Head and Ears in Love, and dreamed of nothing but a Priest and a Wedding Ring.

As nothing pleases a Woman's Vanity more than that her Conquests should make a Noise, Eliza resolved that her's should remain no longer a Secret, and therefore went to visit Miss Teresa a Neighbour and Friend, and told her all that had happened, begging she would come and fee what a glorious Lover she had got; Miss Teresa, as she is, without dispute, one of the prettieft Girls in Paris, thought it an Affront to her Beauty that a fine Gentleman should fall in Love with any but herfelf, and therefore refolved to try the Power of her Charms upon our Colonel, who was fo flruck at her first Appearance, that, notwithstanding his natural Affurance which is what he excells in, he could get no farther than my God! what's this! however, that he might give no Umbrage to Eliza, he whispered in her Ear,

e

3

d

a

bs

no

fi-

101-

np-

his

aft,

the ould

how mal à propos this Girl comes to interrupt my Happiness.

HE then got his Tongue a little untied, and faid all the fine Things that he had either read or could think of, and before he left the House got Permission to pay his Respects to Terefa at an Aunt's House with whom she lived, having neither Father nor Mother; but to make a long Story short, for I fear you are already tired with my Colonel's Amours, I thall only tell you that poor Eliza was abandoned by this roving Warrior, I mean he loved her no longer though he continued his Visits, and protested as much as ever, but Teresa was the Idol of his Heart. He refolved to debauch her first, and with that View went two Days after he had feen her at Eliza's to her Aunt's House, and in a very folemn Manner asked the old Lady's Permisfion to make his Addresses to her Niece, with an Intention to marry her if he was fo happy as to gain her Confent; adding, that her Fortune was a Thing very indifferent to him fince he had enough of his own to support them both.

THE old Woman mightily pleased with the Behaviour and Person of her Niece's Lover, told him that she was very sensible of the Honour he did them; and that if her Niece would follow her Advice he would meet with no Obstacles to the Accomplishment of his Wishes; upon which she rose from her Chair, and conducted him to Teresa's

m

fr

m

SI

D

Pi

ar

ha

resa's Chamber, where she lest him, under Pretence of some pressing Business.

MADAM, said he, when the Aunt was gone, I believe you are too clear-sighted not to have perceived the sudden Effects of your Charms when I had the Honour of seeing you at Eliza's; I am now come to assure you that from that Moment I lest my Liberty, and greedily loaded myself with your Chains; hitherto I have rambled from Fair to Fair and had no matrimonial Designs; but you have at last fixed my roving Disposition, and if my Person and Fortune are not disagreeable to you, I offer you both, and shall reckon the Possession of the charming Teresa the only Blessing that can make me happy.

it

th

py

rer

im

ort

vith

ce's

fible

her

ould lish-

role

resa's

Your Declaration, Sir, answered she, would very much furprize me did I imagine it to be ferious, but I know that it is the ufual Practice of the Gentlemen of the Army to make Love to every Woman they meet with; they look upon this to be an indifpensable Point of Gallantry, and we are, generally speaking, Fools enough to fancy that our Merit produces this Effect; but I must beg Leave to tell you, that I am far from imagining that every Man who fees me must give up his Liberty, and become my Slave; besides, Sir, how is this amorous Declaration of yours confishent with your Protestations to my Friend Eliza? If you are ferious with me you betray her; and I have a better Opinion of your Sincerity than

to

to think you capable of such a Treachery; but supposing it otherwise, and that my Charms, as you call them, had brought about this miraculous Change, can you harbour such a mean Opinion of me as to imagine I would supplant my Friend, and rob her of what she has a better Right to than I can pretend.

I own, Madam, replied he, that I have faid some tender soft Things to Eliza, but I believe she will not venture to say that I ever made Use of the Word Marriage, or made the least Infinuation that my Visits were upon that sooting; so that all she can lay to my Charge is some loose Declarations of Love which Custom authorizes.

VERY well, said she, I have a strong Inclination to believe you; but before I go farther, Friendship obliges me to know Eliza's Sentiments, and if I find that she can survive your Loss, I don't know but I may capitulate upon fair and honourable Terms; in the mean Time, I beg you'll retire and not come near this House for a Week, by that Time I shall be determined whether I will stand a Siege or hang out a Flag of Truce. I obey you, Madam, cried the Colonel in an amorous Transport, but remember that I am resolved to gain the Fort or die in the Attempt; so made his Bow and walked off.

Terefa

I

ck

th

M

M

fio

wł

Terefa had no Patience till she was with her Friend, and was in such a Hurry that she forgot her Fan and Gloves, and even the little killing Patch under the lest Eye. She bounced in upon Eliza, whom she sound, poor Girl, hammering out, with great Toil and Labour, something in the Verse Way upon her dear dear faithful Son of Mars.

PARDON, my Dear, faid she, - but now I think on't - Dear Gentleman, pardon my spinning out this triffling Story to such an extravagant Length. I have been led, I don't know how, from one thing to another contrary to my Intention, and I am afraid very much contrary to your Satisfaction; but I will haften my Pace, and go through what remains with all possible Expedition. Well, I see by a Nod of Approbation that you give me Leave to go on; but, by way of a fecond Digression, it will be proper to tell you, because you'll no doubt wonder how I came to know every Word of their Conversations, that I had the whole Story from Terefa's own Mouth, and that I have a wonderful good Memory. Now to my Story.

e

to

ve

In-

go

WOL

can

may

ms;

and

, by

er l

the

t re-

Fort

w and

Terela

Pardon, my Dear, said she, my Intrufion at a Time when you are busy in writing
--- what --- as I hope to live --- Verses --why then with your good Leave, Shepherdess, I must and will know the happy
Swain. Ah! Teresa, said the languishing
Eliza, excuse my Weakness, you know the
Vol. I.

Cause

### 218 The TRAVELS of

Cause. Ay, I know the Cause; and the dear Cause was telling me just now that I must make Verses too. What do you mean you mad Creature, said mournful Eliza? Why, I mean to ask you a few Questions, to which I desire categorical Answers.

DID ever the Colonel tell you that he loved you? Yes. Did he ever fay that he intended to marry you? No. What would you fay if I named a Person to whom he has not only made strong Declarations of Love, but pressed her hard to go before a Priest? I should say that I am deceived and that he's a Traitor; but pray who is this happy Nymph? I am, Madam, your Ladyship's most obedient humble Servant, and the Goddess to whom your Colonel pays his Adorations.

ARE you in Jest or Earnest, Teresa? In Earnest, Child, in downright Earnest: I resolve to revenge his Treachery to you by the terrible Punishment of Matrimony with me; and don't you think I act the Part of a Friend? Why, Madam, said Eliza, if you are in Jest your Raillery is unseasonable, and if in Earnest, you might have spared yourself the Trouble of coming to insult me.

Well observed, upon my Reputation; I greet you well, my dear Eliza; and if we never meet Maids blame your faithful Warrior; with that she made a very low Cour-

1

V

I

m

ki

pe

Q

in

Da

ish

Wi

tely and walk'd with a regimental Pas towards the Door. Go base Woman, cried Eliza in a terrible Fury, and take this along with you, that I never desire to see your Face, Maid, Wise, or Widow.

WHEN the noble Colonel had regularly performed Quarantine he came to know his Fate, and as it often happens with Lovers who are deeply fmitten, the poor Gentleman quite loft the Ufe of his Tongue, and could not for his Life get farther than Madam I come - I fee fo, Sir, faid Terefa laughing, and I hope it is with a Defign to draw me out of a terrible Scrape. You must know that Eliza is in great Rage against me, to whom she attributes your Infidelity, and the takes on fo heavily that I am afraid the poor Creature will die, but I would not willingly be the Cause of her Death; fo pull up your noble Courage, good Colonel, and return to your old Love. I can tell you for your Encouragement that she loves you passionately, and I but very moderately; that the's conflant, kind and good-natured, and that I am fickle, peevish and extravagant; put her and her Qualities in one Scale, and me and mine in another, and wed me then if you dare.

V

he

0-

fa?

est:

by

with

rt of

a, if

able,

pared

infult

on; l

if we

War-

Cour-

'Tis a Soldier's Trade, Madam, to dare Dangers and despise them; if you are peevish I will be kind, if you are extravagant I will gently advise you: Come, my dear U 2 Teresa,

Terefa, let us for once take a Leap in the dark, and tie ourselves for better and for worse. Fair enough I vow, cried she; but what shall we do with poor Eliza? I cannot must not break her Heart, — But after all, I think I must not break yours neither, nor die an old Maid.

er unito sale anitatatito de conne co WELL --- no --- yes --- ay, ay, it must and it shall be so .- I will fend her a Challenge to fight me with Sword and Piftol; if the accepts, I certainly kill her, if the refuses, you certainly leave her; for no Officer can rank with a Coward: How do you like my Scheme, Sir? But indifferently, Madam; for if you should fall! Why true - I must have one Week more to think of that, fo farewel dear Colonel till this Day Seven-night, when I shall expect to have the Pleasure of seeing you again; and I hope then to give you ocular Demonstration that I can stand a Thrust, or a Brace of Bullets, without bodily Harm. But Madam ----No Buts, Colonel, but march, for I command.

THE poor Slave went out muttering, what an imperious whimfical Devil have we got here; but when all is faid and done, I am so wosfully in Love with this Mrs. Madcap, that I believe I shall be Fool enough to marry her if nothing else will do.

Now

I

h

h

R

to

to

m

Ca

WI

ter

ne

ha

mo

nin nd

vhi Vitl

Now imagine the Scene discovers Miss Terefa, fitting at a Table in a very penfive Posture, and speaking to herself; for the Women you know often do fuch Things: "O Love, cried she, fighing! O Friend-" ship, added she, weeping!" But you'll perhaps ask me, how do you know that she fighed and weeped; my Answer is ready, fhe told me so and I have Reason to believe it.

.

y,

ue nk

)ay

the

ope at I

lets,

om.

ring

ve we ne, l

Madnough

WELL, O Love! O Friendship! O Colonel! O Eliza! what terrible Havock do you make in my poor divided Heart! Shall I basely betray my Friend? No. Shall I break my own Heart? As little. What then? Let me fee; the Man loves me and I love him, that's true; Eliza loves the Colonel and he loves not her, that is as true; now by the Rule of Proportion, where the Odds is two to one the Game ought to be given up, that's to fay, it is as evident as Demonstration can make it, that Mrs. Eliza's Pretensions to the Colonel are not equal to mine; and yet I cannot get it out of my Head but that I wrong her: Come, I must write her a Letter, her Answer will, perhaps, determine me one Way or other; if it is moving, I hall for ought I know defire the Colonel to move off, and if it is provoking I will marry him out of meer Spite; fo to Work she went and wrote the following ludicrous Letter, of Now which she took a Copy; and here it is, writ with her own Hand: reads.

# A TO THE WELL THE TO THE TOTAL THE TOTAL TO THE TOTAL TO THE TOTAL THE TO

#### To Mrs. ELIZA.

Creatures alive, I should make your Ladyship heartily repent your late Behaviour; but I consider that, in your Case, it is not an easy Matter to keep one's Temper, and therefore I have so far got the better of my Resentment as to consult with you how I am to behave with your Colonel, who lays so close Siege to me, that I believe he will at last force me to surrender, unless you can sall upon some Stratagem to make him abandon the Attempt.

HE folemnly protests he never loved you, nor had the least Intention to marry you, and swears lustily that he must and will have me. The Man, I know, is a consummate Rake, but I am so good a Christian that I intend to make him my Husband, meerly for his Conversion. You know by your own Experience, dear Madam, that we all love to have Husbands. Here's a Man who loves me, and the Devil's in't if I don't cure him of his rambling.

Now, if out of Complaifance, or rather far the Sake of Interest, he should marry you, what will be the Consequence? Why truly, my Gentleman having no Goust for the Nuptial

Nuptial Bed, will continue his former Course of Life and doubly damn himself, so that by marrying me he goes to Heaven, and if he marries you he goes you know where.

PRITHEE consult thy Conscience, or rather thy Confessor, and ask whether it be lawful for a Woman to indulge sensual Appetites at the Expence of a Man's Soul; and if he gives it under his Hand that she may, take him with all my Heart; but if otherwise, let me save his Soul, and you will very much oblige

Your most humble Servant,

TERESA.



### ELIZA's Answer.

Have no Notion, Madam, that a Woman who betrays her Friend is capable of loving or being loved by a Husband. If the Colonel is so mad as to marry a Creature of your Character, when the Honey Month is over, he will, no doubt, think himself you know where; and I am apt to believe that he will give more than ever into all Manner of Debauchery.

I shall not give myself the Trouble to consult my Confessor upon the Matter; but if you will consult your own Conscience,

it

rather
y you,
truly,
or the
Juptial

d

y

m

fo at

all

ou,

and me.

ake,

id to

Con-

nce,

Huf-

and of his it will or ought to check you for your base and treacherous Behaviour to

Your once sincere Friend,

ELIZA.

n

ι

iı

Mal

m

if

WHEN Terefa got this Letter she tore it to Pieces, and vowed she'd have the Man, coute qui coute, cost what it would; and when he came to know what was to be his Fate, she told him that having maturely considered the Case she was resolved to make him her Lord and Master upon two Conditions: The first, that he would promise upon his Honour that he would be faithful to his Marriage Vows at least for one Year, and the next that he would visit Eliza, and declare that he never intended to marry her.

THE Colonel jumped for Joy, and would have promised to hang any body but himself to please her. He exactly performed what regarded Eliza, and that poor Lady had the Mortification to see herself abandoned by a Man whom she still loved; she behaved, however, while the Colonel was with her, as if she did not at all value the Loss of him; but this was all Grimace, for when he was gone she burst out in Tears, and for some Days wept herself almost blind.

In the mean Time the Colonel and Miss Teresa were advancing apace towards Matrimony,

mony, at least as she thought; and one Morning, as she was taking more than usual Pains at her Toilet, with a Design, no doubt, to look charming when her Lover came, his Servant brought her the following Letter.



### To Miss TERESA.

THO' I could risk my own Life and Fortune for the Possession of the lovely Teresa, and am certain that my future Happiness or Misery depends upon it; yet I cannot think of doing a Thing which might prove of very bad Consequence to the dear Charmer of my Soul without first acquainting her.

t

d

lf

at he

ed,

n;

was

me

Mifs

atri-

ony,

Know then, my dear Terefa, that Paffion having hitherto given me no Time to reflect, I have been hurried on without thinking of an effential Obstacle to my Happiness; but now that nothing scarce remains but the Ceremony of the Church to unite us for ever; I begin to think seriously of a married State, which naturally leads me to consider whether an Uncle, whose Heir I am, and on whom I intirely depend, will be satisfied with this Match. As he is the most avaricious Man alive, he will never give his Consent to my marrying a Woman without Fortune; and if I should commit Matrimony without confulting

fulting him, he would certainly fettle his Succession without consulting me. What to do in this intricate Case is the Question.

SHALL I make the charming Terefa miferable, which must be the Consequence, confidering the Load of Debt that lies upon my Estate, more indeed than it is worth, though the World believes quite otherwise? No, that would be base and ungenerous, Shall I, on the other Hand, give up my Pretenfions, and thereby render myfelf the moft miserable of all Men? That Thought is killing and I cannot bear it. I fee but one Way of reconciling Love and Interest, and that is private Marriage, which must be concealed like Murder, till it pleases God to call the old Gentleman to himself, who being now upwards of Fourscore, must by the Course of Nature foon decamp.

IF you tell me that I must wait till his Death happens, I shall conclude that you neither love me, nor are perfuaded of the Sincerity of my Passion, and how unhappy should I be in either of the Cases: Heaven's Sake confult with your Aunt; if her Opinion is favourable, you will be fufficiently authorifed to come into my Proposal; and if otherwise, I must facrifice my own Happiness to the Regard which I have for the charming Terefa; but I would fain flatter myfelf that Ladies of your Aunt's and your good Sense will consider my unhappy Case, and that my Scheme is what is daily practifed;

t

n

W

if

fh

tised; for which Reason the complying with it can bring no Reslection upon her or you. I shall wait with great Impatience, but not without Dread, the Return of the Bearer, which will probably determine the Fate of

Your faithful Slave,

The Chevalier DE MENILLE.



TERESA's Answer.

y

he

of

his

you

the

appy

For

; if

fuffi-

ofal;

own ve for

flatter d your Case,

prac-

frances is tolerable, but Love and Poverty seldom dwell together. While we are very fond of one another we may put up with a bad Dinner, but once the fiery Age is off sarewel Love. I believe neither you nor I, good Sir, are so intoxicated with it as to jump headlong into the Gulf of Matrimony; so that before the fatal Knot is tied, we will think a little Consideration is necessary; for my Part, I am just now going to consult with my Aunt, who will tell you herself, if you call here this Afternoon, whether she thinks you and I can live upon Love.

ADIEU.

THE

# 228 The TRAVELS of

THE Colonel did not well know what to make of this Letter; but resolved, in all Events, to feel the Aunt's Pulse, whom he found more tractable than he imagined. In short every thing was fettled, and the two Lovers were to be married next Evening by a Priest of the Colonel's chusing, who to avoid Scruples which he might have met with from the regular Clergy, got the Affair done by one of his own Mermidons, who knew the Form; and by Virtue of that facrilegious Benediction took Possession of the lovely Terefa, with whom he cohabited about eight Days, and then pretended an Obligation of going to his Uncle's Country Seat, about a Hundred Miles from Paris, where he would be obliged to remain a Fortnight or three Weeks. Eight Days Possession of one Woman was a new and a very infipid Thing to our Colonel.

Terefa had already lost all her Charms; Eliza not yet enjoyed was now the Darling of his Heart; and being fully resolved to wed her in the same Manner he had Teresa, he went to his own Lodgings and wrote her the following Letter.



# Charen of the State Mrs. E Lization of the

C. Resysters

#### MADAM,

it

0-

to to

ms;

ling

1 to

rela,

e her

been bewitched with that coquettiful Creature Terefa, whose irregular Conduct has at last opened my Eyes, shewing me at the same Time how much I have been deluded by that whimsical Gypsie, and with what monstrous Ingratitude I have treated the kind and generous Eliza; but could Bitterness and Anguish of Heart obtain Forgiveness, and restore me to the Favour which I have unworthily lost, no Punishment that you could inslict could equal the Torture I'm just now under.

It is indeed furprifing with what Rapidity and Obstinacy I plunged into the Gulf, from whence without a happy Accident I could never have been delivered; but what will my Deliverance signify, if the fair Eliza has withdrawn that Affection which, before I was mad, she was pleased to bestow upon me, and which made me perfectly happy.

O Terefa! Terefa! to what a wretched Condition hast thou reduced me, and how shall I struggle against the Storm that now rages in my throbbing Breast! If my dear injured Eliza can but pardon, all will be Vol. I. X well

#### The TRAVELS of 230

well yet; but if otherwise, I am lost, for ever loft.

To-morrow I shall be close by you at the Church of the Cordeliers; and when you are putting up fervent Prayers to Heaven for the Pardon of your Offences, my languishing Eyes shall put you in mind that to be forgiven you must forgive; and I hope Religion will supply the Want of Love to which I have no more any just Claim, Alas! just Claim! Can he who has fo bafely broke through all the Rules of Honour and Gratitude pretend to any fuch Thing? No, my dear Eliza, I have wantonly forfeited your Esteem; and if ever I am restored to Favour, Compassion alone must plead the Cause of the unfortunated on , no videnowau svad I

Chevalier DE MENILLE,

mad, the was pleated



To the Chevalier DE MENILLE.

HERE are few Women who would not, in my Cafe, be glad of fo favourable an Opportunity of revenging Injuries; but I have a different Way of thirking, and if your future Behaviour anwill live its inclosed and new sail her fwers

.l.loV

f fo

gr

WE

he

his

me

fen

for

3001

swers to your present Protestations, you may still have Pretentions to the Favour of

ELIZA.

P.S. I shall examine your Looks Tomorrow, and shall be glad to read your Conversion in them.

VICTORIA, cried the Warrior, upon Receipt of this Billet; she jumps at the Bait, and I will jump at something else before I'm many Days older.

binald on Women, de

THEY met next Day in the Church, where, after a little tender Chat, another Rendezvous at the Convent of the Gray-Friars was appointed, and here the Colonel finished the Work of his Reconciliation; but told her, that it would not be proper he should appear at her Father's House, nor be seen with her for some Days, till he had got some Letters and Jewels out of Teresa's Hands. In short they met sometimes at one Place and sometimes at another, always with great Precautions for sear of Spies.

were ripe for Execution, he told Eliza that he had all rich Uncle, who was to leave him his Estate, but was so infatuated with Chimeras of Nobility, that he would never consent to his marrying a Merchant's Daughter; for which Reason; he proposed their marrying X 2

15

happy in the Postession of a lovely Holoand,

ing privately, and not to declare their Marriage till after his Uncle's Death, which probably would very foon happen, he being extremely old.

Eliza was a little startled at this Proposal, and told him that she could come to no Resolution in an Affair of this Consequence without her Father's Advice; but the Colonel answered hastily, that if she insisted on advising with her Father, the Project must miscarry for many Reasons too long to be repeated.

-1

a

feh

ti

th

m

PI

11.

-1

CO.

tug

Co

de

II

cor

mil

the

Tric

baffa Mor

playi

AT last, poor Eliza's Heart could stand out no longer against the pressing Sollicitations of this persidious Man; she sighed, dropped a few Tears, and told him, she was ready to give him her Hand when ever he pleased. He expressed his Joy, no doubt, with all the Raptures of a happy Lover.

THE next Night they were married by the fame Operator whom he had already employed and the Colonel was introduced privately for five or fix Nights into Eliza's Apartment. But when the thought herfelf fecure and happy in the Possession of a lovely Husband, behold an Order, I mean a pretended one, from Court appears, and hurries the disconfolate Colonel to Alsace, where the Regiment was then in Quarters.

You may judge of the terrible Condition of both the Ladies at their neither feeing nor hearing

hearing from their Husband for three Months, but this was nothing compared to their Confernation when at last, by some Accident or other, they discovered that they were both married and with Child to the same Man. I am told they both intend to prosecute him before the Parliament; and where this odd Affair will end Time only can discover.

HERE our News, or rather Scandal-monger, ended his Story, and both the Count and I were heartily glad of it, because neither of us were very fond of such Adventures; for my own Part I scarce had Patience to hear it out, and have so mean an Opinion of the Dramatis Personæ that I don't think them worthy of my Remarks, and leave my Readers to judge of them as they think proper.

THE Arrival of a Gentleman who had come to Paris, in the Retinue of the Portugueze Embassador, and with whom the Count was acquainted, made our Historian decamp, which gave me great Pleasure; for I hate all those Creatures who make it their constant Trade to dive into the Secrets of Families with a Design to expose their Failings.

Property belonging to it.

y

t.

ıd

d,
e,

11-

ji-

on

or

ng

THIS Portugueze Gentleman told us, that the Water-works of Verfailles, Marli, and Trianon, were to play next Day for the Embassador. As I had never seen these glorious Monuments of our Sovereign's Vanity displaying their aqueous Wonders, I expressed

X 3

fome Curiofity to fee them; and the Count. tho' he had already feen them playing, was fo complaifant as to fay, that his Lady and he would accompany me; and he invited the Portugueze Gentleman to make a Fourth in his Coach, which he accepted.

THOUGH I have once and again told my Readers that they must not expect Descriptions from me; yet, left they should suspect my Capacity, I will lead them through the Gardens in Triumph. But I think it would be prepofterous to bring them there without telling them fomething of the Palace, which in Lewis the Thirteenth's Time was but an indifferent Building, being then only a Rendezvous for Hunting Matches; for there was but a fingle Building, with a Front, two Wings with four Pavilions at the End of them, and this with a Park and Menagerie belonging to it. But Lewis XIV. intending to keep his Refidence with a great Court here, began in 1661 to environ the old Castle with one far more magnificent, and built Hotels or Pafaces for Persons of Quality, at some Diftance from it; and upon the Avenue of Paris is built a very regular Borough, both for the Plan and uniform Disposition of Houses. THIS Portaguene Gentleman told

THOUGH the old Castle had its Paintings, and was enriched with other Embellishments, yet the King not judging it proportionable to the Magnificence of the new, pulled down the back Part in 1678, which has much

t

H

tl

m

ha

us Be

rin

COI

graced the new, there being now a fair Sight of the Beauty of its Apartments, adorned with the finest Paintings and Sculpture of the ablest Masters of our Age.

THE finest Front, as I have already said, is next the Gardens, on which Side there is a magnificent Portico, supported by Marble Pillars, and floored with Marble an hundred Yards in length; and the Gardens themselves are not to be parallelled; all the beautiful Models that Italy or the World affords were considered, in order to render them the most perfect of any thing of that kind; the Water-works especially are inimitable.

being entired to

.

n

ar

2-

il-

of

oth

of

ngs,

nts,

e to

own

aced

THE Fountain of the Pyramid, the Cafcade of the Water-alley, the Triumphal -Arch, the Dragon Fountain, the Pavilion Fountain, the Water-bower, the Fens. Theatre, Bason of Ceres, the Water-mountain, the Bason of Flora, the Banquetting Hall, Apollo's Bason near the Grand Canal. the Island of Love, the Bason of Saturn, the Bason of Bacchus, the Bason of Latona, the Labyrinth and the Water Parterre, require a more artful Hand to describe them, and perhaps nothing but an actual View can furnish us with an adequate Idea of their various Beauties. The Groves, Grottos, Labyrinths and Orangeries also are exquisitely Contrived i usen note a on bed deidween! the facil Water-walks in the World, and

dergy stiller I dischard a soc gradien a The

THE great Canal is Sixteen hundred Yards long and Sixty-four broad, on which there are feveral Yachts and Galleys, in which the Court fometimes divert themfelves.

is next the Cardene, on which hide

P

R

no

Sci

to

Vi

all

Wit

wh

ed 1

whe

Con

to Z

Lew

main

twel

Towards the Middle of the Grand Canal is another which crosses it, at one End whereof is the Menagery well stocked with all Manner of wild Beasts; and at the other End is the beautiful little Palace of Trianon.

THE Water which supplies these Gardens is brought from the Sein, a League and a Half distant from Versailles, being carried to an Aqueduct of Thirty-six Arches, standing on the Top of a Hill, by a prodigious Machine, which costs about Twenty-sive thousand Pounds per Annum to keep in Repair: From the Reservoir the Water is conveyed by large Iron Pipes to the Fountains and Canals in the Gardens of Versailles and Marli.

It is a common Observation, that if the King had chosen a proper Situation where there was Plenty of Water, these Works would not have cost a tenth Part of the Money they did; but it was to shew his Grandeur, or rather his Vanity, that he made Choice of a Place which had no Water near it, to erect the finest Water-works in the World, and which nothing but a boundless Treasure could have

### Mademoifelle de Richelieu. 237.

have effected; but our good Monarch by most extravagant Expences at home, and unnecessary War abroad, proposed to eternize his Memory, and acquire a Reputation equal to any of the ancient Greeks and Romans.

When we had taken a curfory View of all the furprifing Objects, that from Step to Step presented themselves in this Paradise, we at last reached Trianon, which may be called a Summer-house to the Gardens of Versailles, when you are in this enchanted Place you would be apt to think you were transported to China; for here you see Rooms lined with Porcelain or China, instead of Wainscot, and Floors laid with it.

I could not enter the Cabinet of Mirrors, nor throw my Eyes on the Coach where Miss Scarron made an Attempt, or rather seemed to make an Attempt, upon the good Jesuit's Virtue (for the Reader may remember that all the Advances she made were concerted with Madam Maintenon) without laughing, which the Countess de Saluce observing, asked the Reason, and I promised to inform her when we were by ourselves.

e

e

ot

or

a

क्ष

nd

ald

ve

THE Portugueze Embassador, and all his Company, took Coach at Trianon, and went to Marli, which is another Palace built by Lewis XIV. between Versailles and St. Germains, containing one large Pavilion and twelve little ones, fix on each Side. The Situation

### 238 The TRAVELS of

Situation is lofty and extremely pleafant, but the Buildings are not comparable to Trianon. The Water-works are very beautiful, being supplied from the same Reservoir that furnishes Versailles; and the grand Cascade resembles a River tumbling from a Precipice; the Basons below it are adorned with Groups of Figures, and the Gardens afford such a Variety of pleasing Objects that the late King and Madam Maintenon chose to spend a great Part of their Leisure Hours here.

We took Meudon and St. Cloud in our Way back to Paris, the former the Residence of the late Dauphin, and the latter the Seat of the Duke of Orleans. Though both of them richly deserve particular Descriptions for their natural and artificial Beauties; yet as I am quite cloyed with the Wonders of this Day, and I believe my Readers quite tired with following me about, I will give them and myself too a little Respite.

it

tl

W

as

Lu

Par

Cit by t

the i

Litt.

N

Metr

gin Z

alac

ereig

alace

Cings

As I am often liable to Fits of the Spleen, and at those Times profoundly dull, my Readers may guess that it is so with me just now when I have no better Entertainment to offer them than an old tedious Tale about Paris; but once more let me tell the young Folks, that my Writings are calculated for sedate old Age as well as frolicksome Youth, and that I would rather please one old Man of Sense than twenty young Fools, with whom nothing can go down but Romances Novels, and Love Adventures; but if entertain

yet

merry Strain, I must not quite forget to please myself and others with something solid and useful, and for that Reason I must beg their Leave to put down the sollowing Account of Paris, which I copied out of an old Book.

Paris upon the Seine in the Isle of France is one of the fairest and greatest Cities in the World. Authors cannot agree as to the original Name, or who was the Founder of it; but if we will believe Eusebius it is older than Rome. Julius Casar speaks of Paris as well as Julian the Apostate, who staid in it a great while during his Residence in Gaul. The Latin and Greek Names of it are various, as Lutetia, Leucetia, Leucotetia, Parisii and Lutetia Parisiorum.

Paris, was formerly divided into three Parts, the City, Town, and University. The City is very ancient, built in an Isle formed by the River Seine, where yet may be seen the two old Gates, which are the Great and Little Chatelet, the Names of Prisons.

is

m

en,

my

just it to

bout

bung

for

wth,

Man

with

nces

if

ertain

What is most considerable in it are, the Metropolitan Church of Notre-dame or Virgin Mary, La Sainte Chapelle or Holy Chapele, with several other Churches, and the Palace where the Parliament and other Sorreign Courts hold their Sessions: This Palace was the ancient Residence of the Kings, and the Hall of St. Louis may

# 240 The TRAVELS of

yet be seen in the Conciergerie or Prison there.

THE Town that lies to the north Part is lower than the rest, and built last; it has eight Gates, is crowded with Inhabitants, and contains a vast Number of Churches, Palaces, &c.

THE most famous Building in this Quarter is the Louvre, the King's ordinary Residence since Lewis XII. Philip the August began this sumptuous Edifice in 1214, to lay up his Treasure and Records therein, and to imprison Persons of Quality. Charles V. repaired and enlarged it; and afterwards there were Additions made to it by Francis I, Henry II. Charles IX. Henry IV. Lewis XIII, and Lewis XIV.

(

1

in

to,

thi

of t

the

mir.

Ref

thei

V

Not far from the Louvre is the Cardinal's Palace, called now the Palace Royal, which was built by the Cardinal and Duke of Richelieu.

I shall not trouble the Reader with a Description of the Palaces of the Princes of the Blood, and many others belonging to the Nobility, nor say any Thing but barely to mention the Arsenal, Bastile, the Great and Little Chatelet, the University which More sieur de Balsac called the Latin Cauntry, and others the City of Learning, nor about the other Colleges built by regular and secular Persons

Persons, reckoned in all to be above Sixty, with about 8000 Scholars.

THE Parliament of Paris is the first in the Kingdom. Philip the Fair fixed it, and established the Chamber of Inquests, which Charles VIII. divided into two, and appointed the Tournelle \*.

THE Chamber of Inquests was afterwards divided into five; Francis I. created that of the Demesnes; and Henry III. added that of the Requests of the Palace. The Court des Comptes, or a Sort of Exchequer, where the Finances and Demesnes of the King are registered and taken Care of, was erected at Paris at the same Time as the Parliament was.

Charles VI. established the Court of Aids in 1355; Henry II. added a Chamber thereto, and Lewis XIII. afterwards added a third.

THE Treasury Chamber is the Jurisdiction of the Treasurers General of France; and the Constable, Marshals of France, the Admiral, the Great Masters Inquisitors, and Resormers of the Waters and Forrests have their Jurisdictions at the Marble Table.

Vol. I.

ich

De-

the

the

Monand
t the

ecular

rions

Y

THE

<sup>.</sup> The Criminal Court.

THE Baily of the Palace hath his Chamber or Court in the Grand Hall.

In the Cloister of St. Germain de Lauxerrais without the Palace Walls sits the Great Provost of the Houshold; and in the grand Chatelet is held the Court for administering Justice, and managing the Affairs of this great City; where also the Provost of the Merchants and Echevins, or Mayor and Sheriffs meet for the Dispatch of Business under their Direction.

THERE'S another Court of Justice superior to all these mentioned above, which is the King's Council, and is divided into the Council of State, Exchequer, and Le Canseil des parties, or a Sort of Court of Chancery which receives Appeals in several Cases.

THE Council of State is composed of Persons whom the King is pleased to call to it, and are called Ministers of State.

THE Council of the Finances confists of a Super-intendant or Comptroller-general, Intendants, Comptrollers, Registers, and other Officers.

Le Conseil des Parties is composed of the Chancellor, Councellors of State, and Masters of Requests.

· WERE

I

t

F

21

to

WERE I to give a Description of its Churches, Convents, Hospitals, Colleges, Squares, Bridges, Gates and Suburbs, it would take up a whole Volume; but the Palace des Victoires deserves, not only for Grandeur of the Square itself, but also for a Monument of human Vanity erected in it, to be particularly taken Notice of.

This Square is called Place des Victoires, because of a curious Statue there of Lewis XIV. crown'd by a Victory, with a great many Bas-Reliefs, representing the most remarkable Victories of this Prince. This Statue was erected by the Duke De la Feuillade, Marshal of France, &c. in the Year 1686; 'tis Brass gilt, standing upon a Pedestal of white Marble streaked, Twenty-two Foot high, supported by four Slaves, and ornamented by Trophics and Bas-Reliefs of Brass, representing the most remarkable Passages and Actions of his Majesty's Reign.

THE Groupe of this Statue consists of three Figures, the King in his royal Robes being the principal; the next a Victory, who, standing behind him, puts a Crown upon his Head; and the third a three-headed Cerberus lying at his Feet.

of

0-

the

RE

THE King's Statue is thirteen Foot high, and Cerberus at his Feet represents the Triple League over which that Monarch is supposed to triumph: The Victory has one Foot upon

Y 2

# 244 The TRAVELS of

a Globe, in a rising Posture, and another in the Air; she spreads her Wings for a Flight and crowns the King as she sweeps along.

This Groupe altogether, with the Globe, Hercules's Club, the Lion's Skin and Helmet, weighs about Thirty thousand Weight, and yet was cast at one single running, which makes it one of the most curious Pieces of the Kind that the World can produce. But the Allies once threatened hard to come and demolish it, and had not a seasonable Peace stopt their Journey, I believe they would have been as good as their Word.

THE University which gives Name to that Part of the City which is fituated on the South-fide the River Seine, the Parifiens pretend is one of the most ancient in Europe, and that it formerly confifted of an hundred Colleges, though there are but Fifty-four Houses at present that bear that Name, and of these not more than ten where Exercises are performed, viz. 1. Navarre. Pleffis, which prepares the Students for the Sorbonne. 3. The College of Harcourt. 4. The College of Beauwis. 5. The College of the Cardinal Moine. 6. The College de la Marche. 7. The College de Lisieux. 8. The College de Mantague. 9. The College de Grassins. And 10. The College of the four Nations or Mazarin's College,

d with the Party has one I out

(

it

îı

m

bu

ve

tio

D

CA

I

the

han

whe

In this University are professed Divinity, Law, Physic, and the Liberal Arts, comprehending Humanity, Languages, and Philosophy. The Sorbonne, and the College of Navarre, are appropriated chiefly to Divinity.

THE Schools for Law are in the College of Cambray; and the Physicians have a noble Anatomical Theatre in the Street de Boucherie, and a Hall where they read Lectures.

THE Sorbonne, esteemed one of the finest Colleges in Europe, not only on Account of its Buildings, but the learned Doctors who inhabit it, received its Name from Robert de Sorbonne its Founder, and made but a very mean Appearance till Cardinal Richelieu rebuilt and beautissed it. The Church is a very elegant Structure, and has this Inscription over the Portal, viz.

d

nd

(es

Du

the

ert.

lege

Ccl-

e of

IN

# DEO OPT. MAX. ARMANDUS CARDINALIS DE RICHELIEU.

It has a Dome and four Towers; and on the Side of the Court next the House is a handsome Portico, ascended by sixteen Steps, where we read another Inscription, viz.

Y

Armandus

Armandus Joannis Card. Dux de Richelieu. Sarbonæ Provisor, ædificavit Domum, et exaltavit Templum Sanctum. Domino 1642.

THE Infide of the Church is adorned with Pilasters of the Corinthian Order, between which are Niches filled with Statues of Angels and Apostles; the Dome is finely painted, and the high Altar adorned with fix Marble Pillars of the Corinthian Order, their Bases and Chapiters Brass gilt; and on it is placed a fine Crucifix of white Marble, esteemed an admirable Piece of Workmanthip.

THE Tomb of the Cardinal is in the Middle of the Choir, on which he is reprefented in an almost cumbent Posture, supported by Religion and the afflicted Sciences weeping at his Feet.

t

la

£ K

W

ar

an

ab Bu

the

Ur

the Le

and

THE Library is a handsome Fabric, extremely well furnished with Manuscrips as well as printed Books, having the Cardinal's Picture at one End of the Room, and his Buff in Brass at the other. The Fathers and School Divines are regularly placed one after another, with their respective Annotators under them.

THE College contains Apartments for Thirty-fix Doctors; those who are admitted amongst them before they have obtained their Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 247 their Doctor's Degree, are only said to be of the Hospitality of Sorbonne and not of the Society.

AFTER the Students have attended public Lectures three Years, they are qualified for the Degree of Batchelors, and wear Lamb-skins and Tippets two Years; afterwards they are advanced to the Degree of Licentiates, when they are generally made Opponents to those who come for their Doctor's Degree: Transubstantiation, the Trinity, and Incarnation, are frequently the Topics on which they dispute; and in these Debates it is observed, that they take almost as much Liberty as they would in Protestant Countries.

THE University of Paris, according to their own Writers, was founded about the latter End of the Eleventh Century. Their first Statutes were instituted Anno 1215 by Robert Corceon Legate of the Holy See, in which Time there is no Mention made of any other Faculties, but Arts, Philosophy and Divinity.

es

X-

13

uf

and

ftet

tors

for

itted

ined

heil

Innocent III. introduced the Canon Law about the Year 1236; and it appears by a Bull of Pope Gregory's Anno 1231, that there were Physicians then Members of this University; Canon Law was only read in the University till the last Century, when Lectures were instituted for the Civil Law, and the common Law of the Nation, their Schools

# 248 The TRAVELS of

Schools being first founded for the Liberal Arts only.

THE Head of the University, who is called Rector, is always elected from that Body, and never of the other Faculties. He has the Precedence in the University of all Persons who are not Princes of the Blood; his Habit of Ceremony is a Violet coloured Gown with a Mantle of Ermins; he is elected every three Months.

THE Faculty of Arts is distributed among the four Nations. 1. The Nation of France.

2. The Nation of Picardy. 3. The Nation of Normandy. 4. The German Nation, which comprehends all foreign Nations, as German, English, Irish, Italian, and every one of them have pompous Latin Titles.

il

R

Y

M

छ

2.

wł

CC

Bef

lege

Cip

Deg

the

This University had formerly civil Jurisdiction; and if any one of its Members had
committed a Crime, he was not answerable
for it in other Courts, but the Case is otherwise now, they have lost most of their Privileges; and other Colleges, Academies, and
Societies for improving Arts and Sciences,
have been erected of late Years by the Royal
Licence and Encouragement, in Opposition
as it were to the University, which made
vain Attempts to prevent it.

THE Revenues of the University which arose from a Grant of the Letter-Office were resumed

refumed by the Government, and only a Pension of Forty thousand Livres allowed to the ten Colleges, where Exercifes were held till the Year 1719, when the Duke of Orleans by Letters Patent raised it to One hundred and twenty thousand Livres; but as they are endowed with no Land Effate, they lie wholly at the Mercy of the Government, and whenever the Court has extraordinary Occasion for Money, probably the Univerfity will have their Pension reduced. What contributes most to make Arts flourish in this University at prefent, is that Emulation which is between them and the other Colleges and Accademies, and an Apprehension that they may be one Day judged useless by the State, if they do not exert their Talents.

THE Colleges which have no Dependance on the University are, 1. The College Royal, sounded by Francis I. about the Year 1531, for Philosophy, Eloquence, Mathematics, Physic, the Eastern Languages, &c. situate near the College of Cambray.

2. The Jesuits College, on the Front of which is written in Capitals.

d

le

1-

nd

ral on

ade

ich

rere

med

### COLLEGIUM LUDOVICI MAGNI:

Besides which the Jesuits have two other Colleges wherein they observe their own Discipline; but the Students cannot take their Degrees, unless admitted of some College in the University.

THEIR

THEIR Accademies are, I. the French Accademy, which was at first only a Society of ingenious Men who met once a Week at their respective Lodgings for Conversation, who being encouraged by Cardinal Richelieu, attempted the improving and polishing the French Language; and 1635 the Accademy was established by a Royal Edict; Lewis XIV. appointed them an Apartment in the Lowvre for holding their Assemblies.

THE Royal Accademy of Sciences was established by Mr. Colbert about the Year 1666, and is composed of the most celebrated Philosophers, Mathematicians, &c. for whole Use the King built the Royal Observatory in St. James's Suburb, their Institution being much of the same Kind as that of the Royal Society in London.

1

i

h

of

Fa

be

tia

he

THERE was also a Royal Accademy established for Painting and Sculpture by Lewis XIII. and another for Architecture by Lewis XIV. and the Goblins was erected by Royal Authority, wherein all mechanic Arts are exercised and improved, as the Manufacture of Tapestry, Mosaic Work, wrought Plate, Hard-ware, or Works of Iron, Steel, Copper or Brass, Embroidery, &c. allor which the Jehrits have two other Ock-

THE principal Libraries in Paris are I. The Royal Library, containing, as form fay, about Twenty thousand Volumes of valuable Manuscripts in the Oriental Greek arie Latin TITLE !

Latin, French, and other living and dead Languages, and about One hundred and thirty five thousand printed Volumes after it received the Addition of the Books in the King's Cabinet at Versailles: the same Arret of the Council of State in 1720, which ordered these Books, with the Medals and Rarities, to be transported to his Majesty's Royal Library in Paris expressly enjoined, that no Book or Medal should be lent out on any Pretence, but by the King's express Order; but that all Persons, as well Foreigners as others, should be admitted to peruse the Books, &c. and accommodated with Conveniencies for their Studies.

THE Library of St. Victor, famous for its Manuscripts, and a great Number of excellent Books, is open to the Public three Days in a Week.

d

(e

ng

yal

fta.

ewis

oyal

are Eture

Plate,

Cop.

fome

nes of

Greek, Latin, THE Library of Cardinal Mazarin also has been public ever fince the Year 1680.

THE Library of M. Riponfond, Advocate of the Parliament of Paris was left to the Faculty of Advocates, on Condition it should be publick.

THE Library of the Fathers of the Christian Doctrine has been made publick fince the Year 1718.

THERE are feveral other excellent Libaries, which are only open to the respective Societies

Societies to which they belong, as the Library of St. Martin's in the Fields, the Library of St. Genevieve, that of Sorbon, the Jefuits, &c.

THOUGH I am persuaded that many Perfons, into whose Hands my Travels may fall, have no Occasion for such Descriptions, which they have no doubt feen more ample and exact in other Books, yet as some of my Readers may not have had Occasion to read any thing of this Kind, I shall add a few about the Hospitals, Squares, and Bridges of Paris.

THE Hospitals of Paris, which are about Thirty in Number, some founded for poor old infirm Persons, some for Foundlings, or Children whose unhappy Parents know not how to provide for them, whether legitimate or not; others for Orphans, mad People, blind, Vagrants and Incurables; of which the four chief are those called Hospital-General, the Hotel Dieu, the Hospital of Charity, and the Hotel-Royal des Invalides.

THE Hospital General is a vast Pile of Building, containing fix diffinct Houses; one whereof is for poor old Women and Girls: Another for poor Families and Foundling Children, the others for poor Women fent here to he in, Beggars, Vagrants, &c. In all the fix 'tis faid, there are frequently Ten thousand People, who

216

1

di

CO

of the

fur.

the

the

eat,

pair

Reig

cula

adm

V

Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 253 are employed in Work when they are well, and taken Care of when they are sick; it was finished by Cardinal Mazarin in 1657.

THE Hotel Dieu is the most ancient Hospital in Paris, and entertains all People who are brought thither, whether Natives or Foreigners, which occasions it very often to be too much crowded. The Sick here are attended by the Nuns of St. Austin's with great Care and Tenderness; and the Danger and Trouble of this Office making it esteemed meritorious, the Ladies of the first Quality have sometimes undertaken it, among whom was the Dutchess of Nemours, who took the Small Pox and died in it.

In the Hospital of Charity, the Friars of St. John's perform the same Office as the Nuns do in the former.

e

h

9-

of

es;

and and

1000

Va-

here

who

216

THE Hotel Royal des Invalides, or the Royal Hospital for wounded and infirm Soldiers, is by far the most magnificent; it is composed of five handsome Quadrangles built of hewn Stone, of which the largest stands in the Middle of the rest, the Squares being surrounded with Piazzas and Galleries above them make a very splendid Appearance. In the Resectories or Halls where the Soldiers eat, are all the samous Battles and Sieges painted which were sought during the late Reign. The Chapel is magnificent, particularly the Cupola, which is adorned with admirable Paintings.

Vol. I. Z THE

THE Officers, of whom there are usually between Four and Five hundred, lie two and two in a Chamber, each having a Bed to himself; and the private Men, Six or Seven thousand in Number, but not all in the House at a Time, lie six or seven in a Room, but every one has a Bed to himself; the Apothecary's Shop is extremely well contrived, and well surnished with Drugs, and the Sick are attended by the Sisters of St. La-

THE Officers are fix in a Mace, and the common Soldiers have every Man his Portion ferved up to him in the common Halls; and they are permitted to go out and negotiate their Affairs two Days in a Week.

I

is

tui

tib

fim

firm

inte

Pir

veni

Non

ma

comp

Dux

6 T

zarus.

I was by this Time quite fick with the noisome Smells of Hospitals, and therefore hastened to the Place de Lewis le Grand to breath a little fresh Air; and since I am now there, Civility obliges me to tell my Readers that this Spuare is a large Octogon, open towards the Street of St. Honoré, capable of containing Ten thousand Men, and furrounded with glorious Buildings; but the greatest Ornament is the fine Equestrian Statue of the late King Lewis XIV. in the Middle of it, twenty Foot in Height, and made of Brass, said to be run at one Cast; it stands on a Marble Pedestal filled with Inscriptions, containing the great Actions of this Prince's Reign.

A propos, so little qualified am I to give Descriptions, that when I was giving some Account of the Place des Victoires, I forgot the most essential Thing which is the grand Inscription in Latin, and I believe my Female Readers would have forgiven me had I altogether forgot it; but on the other hand, I consider that I have to do likewise with curious Virtuosos, who cannot pardon such an Omission; and therefore, to keep in good Terms with them, I shall take the Trouble to put it down here though not in a very proper Place.

As I have already faid, this proud Monument was erected by the Duke De la Feuillade to his Master's Glory in the Year 1686. The Tenor of the grand Inscription is as follows.

e

0

rs 0-

Of.

ur-

the

rian

the

and aft;

In-

s of

LUDOVICO magno, Patri exercituum & Ductori, semper felici, Domitis hostibus, protectis Sociis, adjectis Imperio fortissimis Populis, extructis ad Tutelam finium, firmissimis Arcibus. Oceano & Mediterraneo inter se junctis prædari Vetitis toto Mari Piratis: Emendatis Legibus. Deleta Calveniana Impietate; compulsis ad Reverentiam Nominis Gentibus remotissimis, cunctisque summa Providentia, & Virtute domi forisque compositis. Franciscus Vicecomes Daubussion, Dux De la Fueillade, ex Franciæ paribus, & Tribunis Equitum unus in Alobrogibus Pre-

Z 2

### 256 The TRAVELS of

rex & Prætorianorum peditum præfectus ad Memoriam posteritatis sempiternum, P.D.C.

#### ENGLISHED thus:

"To Lewis the Great, the Father, and " always fuccessful Leader of his Armies, " having fubdued his Enemies, protected " his Allies, added mighty People to his " Empire; builded impregnable Citadels to " defend his Frontiers, joined the Ocean " and the Mediterranean; cleared the Sea " of Pyrates, reformed the Laws, eradi-" cated Calvinistical Impiety, compelled the " remotest Nations to revere his Name, and " fettled all Things at home and abroad by " his great Prudence and Valour: Francis " Viscount Aubusson, Duke De la Fuillade, "Peer of France, Colonel of Horse, Vice-" roy of Savoy, and Captain of the Royal "Guards, to perpetuate his Memory to Posterity, has erected, dedicated, and " confecrated this Statue."

I

de

B

th

W

re

Riv

on wh

Cri

Now my Hand's in, I must still beg a little Indulgence to some more dull Descriptions, for which my Readers ought rather to pity than to find Fault with me, since I can assure them with the greatest Veracity that I am heartily tired with them. But, say they, if this be the Case, why do you plague us and yourself too with such dry insipid Stuff? Why truly, to be very ingenuous,

genuous, the Reason is plainly this: I know by myself how fond a Woman is of an entertaining Book, and that she would much rather lose her Rest than not to know the Refult of a pretty Story, fo that if I were not now and then a little dull, and by that Means give a little Respite, it might happen with every young Girl, into whose Hands my Travels happen to fall, as it did with a young Lady of my Acquaintance, who spoiled a pretty Pair of Eyes with poring Night and Day upon Caffandra, I should be very forry any fuch Mischief should happen upon what drops from my Pen, and therefore Ladies divert yourselves the best Way you can, till I take a View of some Squares, Gates, and Bridges.

THE Place Royal is perfectly square, and one of the largest in Paris, about the same Dimensions as Lincoln's-Inn-Fields in London; it has a Piazza on every Side, and the Buildings are magnificent and uniform; in the Middle of it is an Equestrian Statue of Lewis XIII. erected by Cardinal Richelieu, with several Inscriptions, expressing the most remarkable Events of his Reign.

era-

ne,

test

em.

do

dry in-

MIS,

THE Place called the Greve lies by the River Side; it is here the People affemble on rejoicing Days, and likewise the Place where Offenders are executed for capital Crimes.

Z 3

THE

THE Place Maubert serves for holding one of the greatest Markets in Paris, on Wednesdays and Fridays Weekly, and lies near the Keys de Tournelle and St. Bernard.

THE principal Gates are those of St. Denis, St. Martin's, St. Anthony's and St. Bernard, which are not unlike that of Temple-Bar in London.

THAT of St. Denis is Seventy-two Foot broad, and of the same Height, being built after the Model of an ancient Triumphal Arch; there are two little Portails on the Sides of the great one; the largest is Twenty-four Foot in Height, and on it several Basso Relievos representing the French Armies passing the Rhine, Waal, &c. with a vain Latin Inscription.

THE Gate of St. Martin was built in the Year 1674, after the fame Model as that of St. Denis, representing a Triumphal Arch with three Overtures, the largest fifty Foot in Height, and as many in Breadth, with a little Portail on each Side, with two Inferiptions, not less vain than that of St. Denis.

t

B

P

th

H

is I

THE Gates of St. Anthony and St. Bernard are also both of them built after the Model of a Triumphal Arch; the latter is adorned

### Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 259

adorned with Baffo Relievos on one Side, representing the King distributing the Wealth brought into this City by Navigation. On the other Side, we see a God steering a Ship under full Sail.

As Paris is divided by the River Seine into three Parts, there are not less than ten or twelve Bridges over the several Branches of it, of which the three principal are the Pant Royal, the Pant Notre-dame, and the Pant Neuf.

THE Pont Royal is a plain Stone Bridge of five Arches, built cross the united Stream of the Seine, over-against the Thuilleries about the Year 1685, in the room of a Wooden Bridge which was broken by the Floods. Lewis XIV. to perpetuate his Name, lodged in the Stone-work of this Bridge several Cedar-boxes, adorned with the Arms of France, in which he enclosed twelve Copper Medals, twelve of Gold, and twelve of Silver, with several Mottos relating to his Conquests; this Bridge is Seventy-two Fathoms long, and eight Fathoms four Feet broad.

of

rch

oot

h a In•

St.

Ber-

the

er is

rned

THE Pont Notre-dame, or our Lady's Bridge, so called from its lying over that Part of the Seine which runs between the Island of Notre-dame and the South Part of the Town, is also built of Stone, and hath Houses on each Side as London Bridge, but is much shorter; it was built by Lewis XII.

about

## 260 The TRAVELS of

about the Year 1507, in the room of a Wooden Bridge which was carried away by the Stream.

THE Pont Neuf, or New Bridge, is a handsome Piece of Architecture, and lies over both Branches of the Seine and the west End of the Island called the Palais; it is One hundred and seventy Fathoms long and twelve broad, raised on each Side for Foot People to walk on, in which respect it is more commodious than London Bridge, but is not near so large nor so substantial, nor indeed is there any Occasion that it should, the Water not running with that Force it does at London, and there being no Manner of Tide here.

This Bridge was begun by Henry III. in the Year 1578, and finished by Henry IV. in the Yera 1604. On it is an Equestrian Statue of this Prince much larger than the Life, set upon a Pedestal, with sour Slaves at the sour Corners, and the Inscriptions and Basso Relieves shew the most memorable Transactions of his Reign.

I thank my Stars I am now got out of the Labyrinth of Descriptions, and find myfelf as it were relieved of a heavy Load which has so fatigued me, and I dare say my Readers too, that I shall endeavour to indemnify them, and myself likewise, by something more diverting. I

1

y

ol

Y

cl

I

qu

kn

me

wh

In

mif Fri

ONE Evening as I was in quest of the Count and Countess de Saluce, with whom I had appointed to meet in the Gardens of the Thuilleries, not finding them in the great Walk I went to the Alley called the Lover's Walk, or the Alley of Sighs; and having feated myself on a Bench, a handsom genteel young Man came and fat down by me. We remained fome Time filent, but being refolved to have a little Conversation I first broke the Ice.

IT is a little furprizing, Sir, faid I, that People of your Age and mine should come and feek Solitude in this retired Alley, unless it be to figh for some cruel Fair; for my Part I never was maltreated by Love, and nothing of that Kind brings me here, and I should be glad to think the Case were so with you too; but a certain Melancholy which I observe in your Looks, and some Sighs which you endeavour to fmother, make me conclude that your Mind is not easy; and tho' I am an intire Stranger to you, and confequently ought not to imagine that you will trust me with any Secret, yet I find, from I know not what Reason, that it would give me great Pleasure to do you Service.

I thank you, Sir, faid he, and whether what you fay be fincere or only Compliment, I shall frankly tell you that I am very much mistaken if you are not a Person whose Friendship is valuable, and that it gives me great

IB

great Pleasure that your Thoughts and mine correspond in wishing for a nearer Acquaintance, which I shall be very ready to cultivate; and therefore shall presume to ask your Name and where you lodge, that I may have the Honour of paying you a Visit; both which I directly told him, and intreated he would do me the Favour to come and dine with me next Day, to which he agreed; and perceiving an elderly Man coming towards us he rose from his Seat, and told me that having some Business with that old Gentleman, he must deprive himself of the Pleasure of my Company till next Day, so made me a Bow and walked off.

AFTER he was gone I began to confider what made me so fond of this young Man at first Sight, and was under some Apprehensions of that Weakness which the World calls Love; but upon a more strict Examination of my Heart, I found no other Defires in it but fuch as I felt for the Count de Saluce and his Lady, which could amount to no more than Friendship, and this Discovery gave me a great Deal of Pleasure.

t

W

bo

m

the

A

tag

Ge

ker

Pro

uall

I rambled up and down the Garden for fome Time in quest of the Count and his Lady, whom I at last discovered on the Terras facing the River; and upon my coming up to them, they told me that I had lost the Pleasure of being present at a very odd Scene between two Ladies, who after some hard Words had at last come to Blows; and

## Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 263

and notwithstanding all that a Gentleman, who was with them, and whom they both loved, could fay or do, had tore and scratched one another's Faces to the Effusion of Blood.

THE Prince de Conti happening to come to the Field of Battle when the two Amazones were in hot Engagement, insisted on knowing the Quarrel, with an Intention, as he pretended, to make up the Breach, but in Reality to divert himself; and having made a Ring about the two Combatants and their Lover, he very courteously offered his Mediation.

PRINCE, said one of the Ladies, named Mademoiselle de Closier a Counsellor's Daughter, and who had been the Aggressor, I look upon your Highness's Presence here at this Time as a very lucky Accident, and I shall with great Pleasure submit the Difference between that Woman and me to the Determination of a Prince who is as famous for his Equity as his Capacity.

le

0

Y

for

his

er-

ing

the

bdd

me

ws;

Your Highness must know, continued she, that this base Woman, pointing to her Antagonist, has used a thousand hellish Stratagems to make a Breach betwixt this Gentleman and me, with whom I have kept Company for above a Year, upon the Prospect of Marriage, which we had mutually promised, and the Celebration of it only

## 264 The TRAVELS of

only delayed till the Arrival of his Uncle, on whom he has a Dependance.

SHE carried on her damnable Scheme for artfully, without appearing in any Part of it herfelf, that instead of suspecting her, I confulted with her upon every thing that happened, and would not for the World have acted otherwise than she advised; so that without appearing to oppose my Inclination for this Gentleman, or our intended Union, the found Means to have me reprefented to him, and him to me, in fuch black Colours by feveral of her Friends that we had a terrible Quarrel, and could scarce bear the Sight of one another; and had we not, by a very unexpected Accident, discovered the whole Plot. The would have succeeded to her Wish; but what is more furprizing to me than all the Villainy of her horrid Scheme is, the Impudence of the Creature to come boldly up to this Gentleman and me, as we were walking together, though she knew very well that we were fully informed of every Step she had taken: I confess that I was fo provoked at this infufferable Piece of Impudence, that I could not hinder myfelf from faying some harsh Things to her, which she answered in Terms not less offenfive; so that after a short scolding Bout we came to Blows, and I believe we should scarce have given over the Combat till we had pulled out one another's Eyes, had not the Presence and the Respect due to 1 Prince

po

n

u

fu

W

Se

dr

w

and mai Vai pref

one oth Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 265
Prince of the Blood procured a Cessation of Arms.

THE other Lady did not at all deny but that she had used all possible Means to create Jealousies between her Rival and the Gentleman; but hoped his Royal Highness would confider that, as Self-love is, and indeed ought to be, the Motive of almost all our Actions, it was her Business to disappoint a Rival who proposed to make a Property of a Man whom she loved, and to whose Heart the had an equal Claim in the Way of perfonal Merit, and if the Advantage of a fuperior Fortune ought to determine his Choice, she might have expected the Preference; but not to trouble your Highness, added she, with a long Enumeration of our mutual Claims, I shall put the whole Issue upon this fimple Question, which I humbly fubmit it to your Highness's Consideration, whether a Man who has any Pretentions to Sense and Reason would not prefer a Hundred thousand Livres to Twenty thousand. when the Odds of Beauty bears no Proportion to the Money.

e

d

ce y-

er,

n-

we

uld

we

not

0 1

ince

THE Case is delicate, said the Prince, and I cannot take upon me to decide in it; and then addressing himself to the Gentleman, Sir, said he, some Men would have a Vanity in making a Conquest of two such pretty Ladies, but as the doing Justice to one must be attended with Cruelty to the other, a Man of Gallantry must be puzzled Vol. I.

how to determine himself; however, as the Ladies have come to fuch Extremities already, and that greater Mischief may probably happen, I think it is incumbent upon you to prevent more Blood shed, by declaring yourfelf now in favour of one of the two.

I wish the Ladies, answered the Gentleman, had chosen a less publick Place to decide their Quarrel, though I am perfuaded they could no where meet with a more competent Judge than your Highness; but since what's done cannot be undone, and that our Affairs cannot be made more publick than they now are by this unlucky Accident, I humbly entreat your Highness would be pleased to pronounce which of the Ladies I am to marry, and I will punctually obey your Commands; upon which, the Prince turning to the Ladies, asked if they would agree to his Decision, and they both answered yes.

WELL, well, cried he, my Opinion is that Chance shall decide the Matter; we will write down the Ladies Names upon two Bits of Paper, put them into a Hat, and get this little Miss, pointing to a Child, to draw out one of the Names who shall be the happy Woman.

THE Prince got a Pencil, and having wrote the Names put them into his own Hat, which he took Care to shake that the Ladies might have fair Play; and the little

Girl

h

V

F

(

0

ti

a

Girl being called, pulled out the Paper, on which was Mademoiselle de Closter's Name, at which poor Mademoifelle Biron, the other Lady, was like to faint; but the Prince flew to her Affistance, and told her that he would provide her a Husband that should be nothing inferior to the one she had lost, and to convince her that he was in good Earnest, he took a Gentleman by the Hand who made one in the Ring, and presenting him to the Lady, told her, that he hoped she would allow his Friend to conduct her home, which, added he fmiling, will give you both an Opportunity of knowing one another's Merit, and inspiring you with such Sentiments as I could wish you both to have.

THE Gentleman, whose Name is the Chevalier D'Orville, after returning Thanks to the Prince, made a handsome Compliment to the Lady, who presented him her Hand; and after telling the Prince that she thought it her Duty to obey his Orders, she directed her Steps towards the Garden Door, led by her new Gallant, and Mademoiselle de Choser with her's, after a fine Compliment to his Highness as the Author of their Happiness (which by the Bye was the meer Effect of Chance) walked towards the opposite Door of the Garden, and the Prince with his Court continued their Walk, laughing heartily at this Adventure, which with what had happened to me in the Lover's Alley, afforded ample Matter for us to discourse upon after we were returned to our Lodgings.

Aa 2

### 268 The TRAVELS of

THE next Day about Ten o' Clock a Footman brought me the following Letter.



To the Chevalier DE RADPONT, at the Hotel de Luines.

SIR,

ERE I to confult only my Inclination, I should, no doubt, perform my Promise to you last Night in the Alley of Sighs, but as I have changed my Breeches into Petticoats, or rather as I am not a Man, but a Girl, who, to avoid being forced by fevere Parents to marry an old disagreeable Miser, has made an Elopement, dressed as you saw me; Decency and Modefty, which I hope you think the best Ornaments of my Sex, will not permit my vifiting a Gentleman who is no Relation; but fince I must deny myself the Pleasure of feeing you at your own Lodgings, my Aunt, at whose House I now am, authorises me to tell you, that the Chevalier de Radpont shall be welcome to her House, if his Curiofity prompts him to come and fee whether Peticoats or Breeches best becomes his Humble Servant,

Felicité de Courbon.

P. S. My Aunt's Name is Madam de Perrin, and her House in St. Dennis Street. f

tl

tr

I

th

ha



My Answer to the above.

MADAM,

t, to

all

ty

tible

n.

My

JOUR Metamorphofis neither furprizes nor afflicts me; for to speak the Truth, I thought there was fomething too delicate in your Shape, Complexion, and Features for a Man: Though the Sight of you in Peticoats may be dangerous, and the Lofs of my Liberty may perhaps be the Confequence of it, yet I must fatisfy my Curiofity, and affure the lovely Miss Courbon in Person that none is more her most obedient Servant than the

#### Chevalier DE RADPONT.

I dined, according to Custom, with the Count and his Lady, to whom I shewed Miss Courbon's Letter, and told them that I refolved to make her a Visit after Dinner. Why not, faid the Count, but take Care that this pretty Miss does not put a Stop to our travelling Project. No, no, cried I, though I have all the Regard for her Charms that they deserve, yet I dare say they will not have the Power to retain me at Paris.

My dear Chevalier, said he, don't let us trust too much, nor be over confident of our own Strength? you, perhaps, may just now think Aa 3

think as you fpeak, but Women are bewitch. ing Creatures, and will steal into our Hearts in Spite of all our Reason and Philosophy; Before I faw this fair Lady, continued he, throwing an amorous Glance at the Countels, I had fuch an Indifference, or rather an Aversion to Matrimony, that I thought it was not in the Power of the whole Sex to make me think otherwise, but I soon found my Mistake, and in a Quarter of an Hour's Time became quite another Creature, and would have facrificed not only Liberty but the whole World for the Possession of what I now enjoy, and in which I place the whole Happiness of my Life; so that my dear Friend, added he, what was my Cafe may be yours, and I must own that this Visit alarms me, from a Notion that it may perhaps alter your Scheme, and deprive me of the Pleasure which I proposed to myself in your Company to the South of France.

My dear Count, answered I, nothing can be more obliging than the Fears you are pleafed to express of my becoming Miss Courbon's Conquest; but the' I do Justice to her Merit, I can very well diftinguish between the irrefistable Charms of the Countess de Saluce and Beauties of an inferior Class; I should be as much surprised to think that you had preferved your Liberty after feeing her, as of my lofing my own upon a fecond Interview with Miss Courbon, and I must add that my Inclination or rather Passion for travelling is such, that were your Prophely Prophefy to prove true, and that her Charms should make an Impression upon my Heart, even that should not hinder me from pursuing my Scheme, nor from waiting on the Count and Countess de Saluce, whenever, or wherever they shall order me to them.

But, faid the Counters smiling, and addreffing herfelf to the Count, if my Conjectures be not wrong, this young Lady entertains as favourable an Opinion of the Chevalier as he does of her; and in this Cafe, would it not be somewhat cruel in us to drag a Man from Paris, whose Absence will perhaps make her miserable. I know by Experience what we Women fuffer in fuch Cases, and I would not for any Consideration contribute to break a poor Lady's Heart; fo my Dear, added she, taking the Count by the Hand, is there no Way to bring her and me together? Though in most Things our Penetration is far inferior to that of Men, yet we have the little Art of finding out one another's Sentiments better than the Men, particularly in Matters that regard the Heart.

n

0

-

10

to

ty

vn

er

ur

fy

I can with the Chevalier's Permission, anfwered the Count, very eafily bring that about; for the Lady with whom Miss Courbon lodges is Widow to a Man who was an Advocate in the Parliament, employed by my Father feveral Times, and whom I have feen in Auvergne. The Regard our Family had for

for the Husband will authorife a Visit to the Widow; and if our dear Friend here would not look upon us as Spies to observe his and the young Lady's Behaviour, I would propose our accompanying him in this Visit.

WITH all my Heart, cried I, laughing within myself at their Fears of my being caught, I shall be heartily glad of your Company, that you may tell me whether I am in Love with Miss Courbon, and your Lady whether I meet with any Return.

MATTERS being thus fettled, the Coach was ordered to be ready at Three o' Clock, and away we drove to Madam Perrin's, to whom Word was fent up that the Count and Countess de Saluce were come to pay her a Visit, and we were immediately introduced into a low Parlour, where the Widow and Miss Courbon were to receive us.

THE Count made Madam Perrin a Compliment of Condolence upon the Death of her Husband; and after presenting his Lady to her, took me by the Hand, and faid, Madam, give me Leave to present the dearest of my Friends to you in the Person of the Chevalier de Radpont; and then turning to Miss Courbon, Mademoiselle, added he, as I have prefented this Gentleman to your Aunt, I hope he will do me the fame Favour with regard to you, fince I understand that you are already acquainted.

a

I

h

P

H

in

ha

THE slender Acquaintence, answered I, that I have with this Lady does in no Manner intitle me to ask her a Favour; however in the present Case, as she will, I dare say, look upon my introducing a Gentleman of the Count de Saluce's Merit to her rather as an Obligation than any thing else, I shall freely take upon me to tell her, that I know none more worthy of her Acquaintance and Friendship.

Miss Courbon made the Count a very graceful Curtefy; and addressing herself to me: Sir, said she, you judge very right that I am indebted to you for this Favour, and I thank you for it; but suppose the Case were really otherwise, I could not without Ingratitude but be glad of any Opportunity to oblige a Man who so frankly offered me his Service Yesterday; but I don't know, continued she blushing, whether I ought to put you in mind of a Passage that shews your Generosity, and perhaps a Levity in me, inconsistent with the strict Rules of Modesty.

As this Reflection could not but affect me, who had no such Motive for my Disguise as Miss Courbon, I made Haste to answer, that as she had done me the Honour to give me a Hint in general Terms of what had induced her to dress in Men's Cloaths, she could not imagine that I could be so void of Sense as to have the least Suspicion of her Virtue upon that

Ė

that Account; on the contrary, I admired her Courage and Resolution, and wished that all Parents who had fo little Regard to the Happiness of their Children as to force them to marry against their Inclination, might be disappointed in their fordid mercenary Views; for, added I, in a Sort of enthusiastic Rapture, though I am not for young People's hurrying into Matrimony without any Thought how they are to support themselves and a Family in that State, yet as it is impossible with all the Advantages of Fortune to make Marriage happy where the Persons united are not tied by the Chains of Love, I am still more against the common Maxims of Parents in the Establishment of Children, according to their mercenary Views, than I am against two young Creatures who follow the Dictates of their Hearts without confidering the Confequences. The former are wretched amidst their Wealth, and if the latter are not oppressed with downnright Poverty, their Love to one another will make them support the Cares of Life with a furprifing Constancy and Resolution: The faithful Husband will put himself into a hundred Shapes to get Bread for his dear Mate, and the loving Spoule will put up with a fober Meal, fince the knows that her Husband would give her better could he afford it.

I think it scarce can be disputed but that the Generality of Mankind are diffatished with their Situation in Life, meerly because

they

t

F

t

n

y

SI

ba

F

ne

wa

tin

har

hap

be :

the

not

ool

of (

ecti

with

tano rem

luft

uch

### Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 275

they see others about them moving in a higher Sphere of Pleasure; such Persons may indeed think themselves unhappy; but I really think they deserve to be so, and cannot pity them.

FOR my Part, faid Mifs Courbon, I think fuch Sentiments very fine in Theory but to put them in Practice at your Age and mine is not quite fo eafy. A Coach and Six in my Opinion is a very pretty Vehicle; to be the most richly dressed at an Assembly, a Play, or a Ball, and to dazzle the Eyes of the Spectators with Knots of Brilliants, is to me a delicious Thing. But, fay you, fince you place Happiness in outward Pomp and Shew, why did you not accept of the Hufband whom your Parents defigned for you? For this very good Reason, that he could neither afford me the one nor the other, and was old into the Bargain. I confess, continued she, that where Love and Interest go hand in hand, Matrimony must be a very happy State, but I look upon the latter to be a necessary Ingredient to give a Relish to the former; for should it happen, a Thing not at all impossible, that a married Couple took a Difgust from a thorough Knowledge of one another's real or imagined Imperections, what a difmal Case must theirs be with the Addition of straitned Circumfances; the very Thoughts make me and methinks I fee the furly tremble, Justiand curfing his Stars for having been ach a Fool, and the Wife tearing her Hair

f

.

ts

ne

h,

th

10-

of

10-

put

read

ouse

the

etter

that

isfied

cause

they

# 276 The TRAVELS of

Hair for having married a Beggar. Very few People are ignorant of the melancholy Story of Monsieur de Lunelle, and I think it may be brought as an Instance, which but too evidently proves my Assertion.

I am one of those, said the Countess de Saluce, who are ignorant of that Story, and were it not giving you too much Trouble I should be very well pleased to hear it.

NOTHING can be troublesome to me, Madam, that can oblige you replied Miss Courbon; and if none of the Gentlemen will undertake to satisfy your Curiosity, which they could do to more Advantage than I can pretend to, I will at least relate the principal Facts, and if I am flat in the Repetition I hope my Readiness in obeying your Commands will plead my Excuse.

and the day from 18120 Legion in the first to the first to the first to The

m



The Amours of Monsieur DE LU-NELLE, Captain in the Queen's Regiment of Horse, and Mademoiselle DE HOUTOLLE, afterwards a Nun at Toulouze.

ADAM, faid Miss Courbon, addref-fing herself to the Counters, the Story I am going to relate, will shew how far the Passion of Love, particularly when it meets with what may be justly called cruel Opposition, is capable of transporting young People, and how little Stress ought to be laid on the Duration of our Attachments when they are not founded upon the Basis of Reason; but at the same Time I am to draw a dismal Picture of Tyrannical Parents, who chuse rather to facrifice a lovely Daughter, than to give her a Husband whom she loved, and in every Respect a suitable Match; but being of a genteel generous Disposition, his Mistress's Parents, who were covetous to the last Degree, could not bear the Thoughts of making him their Son-in-law.

Vol. I.

be

ВЪ

Monfeur

## 278 The TRAVELS of

Monsieur de Lunelle was a Gentleman's only Son, who lived a few Miles from Toulouze in Languedoc, and enjoyed an Estate of about Four hundred a Year. His Son, a genteel sprightly Boy, was about the Age of Twelve when Monfieur de Houtolle, first Coufin to his Father, and who had a small Estate in the Neighbourhood, being obliged to go to Paris upon a Law Suit of Confequence, begged the Favour of the old de Lunelle his Cousin, to allow his Daughter to remain at his House, while her Mother and he were absent, to which Lunelle frankly confented, and affured him that he would with Pleafure take Charge of the little Houtolle as long as he thought proper to let her remain with him, fo that her Father and Mother setting out a few Days after, Miss was brought to his House; she was then about ten Years of Age and one of the prettiest Creatures that France could boast of. sa of ideas

It is very furprifing that we should seel the Effects of Love before we have any Knowledge or Idea of the Thing, but many Instances may be given to prove that it is really so, and the Case of young de Lunelle and his Cousin, in particular, puts it out of all Doubt.

n

th

in

M

the

Wo

but ing

THE first Sight moved their little Hearts with such a sympathetic Power, that when the old Gentleman desired his Son to embrace his Cousin, they slew into one another's Arms,

#### Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 279

Arms, and God knows how long they would have remained in that Posture had they not been told that they had given fufficient Marks of Friendship.

THE young Youth faid, with fome Refentment, that his Father was very hafty; and the Girl told him that the loved her Cousin very much. I believe it, my Dear, faid the old Gentleman to her, but little Girls must not appear to be too fond of Boys tho' their Relations.

Why fo, cried the Son, I am fure I have feen you and her Mother often clasped in one another's Arms, and I think I ought to follow your Example; befides, dear Papa, I think my Coufin has such a pretty Mouth that I could kiss it a Hundred and a hundred Times with more Pleasure than any of the Count de Lur's Daughters that come here; and I. cried Miss Houtolle in a Hurry, would rather give my Cousin ten Kisses than allow any of the Marquis de Miramelle's Sons to approach my Cheek, and I will plainly tell them fo the first Time that they offer to kiss me.

ľ

d

it

eel

ny

ny 15 elle

of

arts

hen

race her's

rms,

THE old Gentleman could not help smiling at this Dialogue, and began from that Moment to discover that these two Childrens Hearts felt the same Sentiments, and that they were embarked in a Passion which would increase as they advanced in Years; but he refolved to let it take its Course, hoping that his Son, when he was received in the

B b 2

the Corps of the Musqueteers, and residing at Paris, would think no more of his Cousin.

NEVER Passion made a stronger or a quicker Progress than it did in the Hearts of these two Children. If the Boy was but a Moment longer about his Exercises than usual, he always found poor Miss all bathed in Tears; and if the happened to be out of the Way when he came to her Chamber, he ran hither and thither as if he had loft his Senses. In short, they were deeply in Love, and could relish no Diversions except they shared in them.

THEY went on in this Manner for fix or eight Months, when Miss Houtolle's Father and Mother arrived from Paris, and resolved to take their Daughter from their Friend's House; the Separation of the two young Creatures was, as I have been told, extremely moving.

THE Boy first used many Arguments with his Mistress's Father to let her stay, but when that would not do he attacked him in another Shape: Sir, faid he, my Father has kept your Daughter fo many Months, and therefore it is but just you entertain his Son as long, fince I am very fure he will take nothing for her Board; she and I have contracted fuch a Friendship that we would not willingly part fo foon, I believe if you will be fo good as to ask her she will confirm what

n

fa he

B

I say; however, if Timidity and Respect should tie up her Tongue, and supposing farther that it is a Matter of Indifference to her whether she goes or stays here, I hope you'll intercede with my Father to let me pass some Months at your House in Company with your two Sons, where I can make the fame Application to my Book as I do

Monsieur de Houtolle laughed heartily at this Harangue, and told the Orator, that fince he put him in mind to discharge an Obligation which he should not perhaps have otherwise thought of he would propose the Affair to his Father, and that it should not be his Fault if he did not fucceed: year od of bemost the sections of om

i polonio um pani I in tanti med plantis

S

y

10

er

ed

d's

ng ely

rith

hen

her cept

eren as

no-

con-

not

will

what

HE was indeed as good as his Word, but Lunelle could not be prevailed with to grant his Request, alledging that it would divert his Son from his Studies, when he found himfelf no longer under his Inspection. to recount all that the young Spark faid when he understood that his Father would not confent to his going with his Coufin, I should swell my Story to a Length that would make it tiresome.

HE flew to her Chamber, and taking his Miltress in his Arms: My dear Emilia, faid he in a very melancholy Tone, (this was her Christian Name) our Parents have the Barbarity to separate us; but if your Heart

B b 3

feels

feels what mine does, it should not be in their Power to hinder us from employing the whole Moments of our Life in thinking of one another; but perhaps your Heart is not moved at this Separation as I find mine is. and that you can part with me as eafily as you can with any other Person in this House.

How unkind is fuch a Thought, answered the with Tears in her Eyes, did I not already tell your Father that I would rather give you ten Kisses than Miramelle's Sons one, though they make very much of me every Time they fee me; nay, the eldek told me the last Time he came here, that he envied your Happiness in being always in my Company, and feemed to be very forry when I told him that if I had my Choice I would never part with you; and if this be the Case, how can you imagine that it will give me no Trouble to return to my Father's House.

ALAS! answered he fighing, how agreeable is this Declaration, and how cruel is it to part Persons who have so strong Desires to be constantly together; my Father thinks that if he allowed me to go and flay fome Time at your House I should perhaps neglect my Book; little does he know that the Pleafure of paffing my Hours of Recreation with you would make me get my Task much sooner than otherwise; but he will see when you are gone that I can neither read nor write,

contaminate has a reaches to a

write, and that, instead of making a farther Progress, I shall forget all that I have already learned; and my Mother, cried she sighing, will soon perceive that I spoil my Work with my Tears.

This Dialogue continued for a whole Hour, and many kind tender Things were faid, all the Dictates of Nature, without the least Art, which made this Scene of Love more beautiful than all the studied Expressions of Lovers more advanced in Years.

WHEN the fatal Moment of parting came the young Lunelle fainted away, and poor little Miss burst out in Tears, and would have sunk down with her Lover, had not her Mother caught her in her Arms, and clapt a little Bottle with the Spirits of Harts-horn to her Nose.

+

n

be

ee-

sit

to

nks

ome

rlect

lea-

with

nuch

when nor

vrite,

Lunelle remained some Time motionless, and his Father was terribly frightened; but at last by throwing Water on his Face and other Means he came to his Senses, and no sooner opened his Eyes than he looked round for his Mistress, who happened to be close by him; he took her by the Hand and told her with a faint Voice, I am glad I see you once more before my Death; and she, poor Creature, would have fain said something but heavy Sighs and Sobs would not allow her to pronounce one Word.

## 284 The TRAVELS of

THE old Lunelle, who was passionately fond of his Son, now saw plainly how the Case stood with him, and was resolved to treat him gently, hoping that this Childish Passion would, as I have already said, be cured by Absence; and therefore he exhorted him not to afflict himself at the Departure of his Cousin, promising that he should have his Permission to go and see her every Week, till he sent him to Paris. These Words produced a very good Effect, and they parted with melancholy Looks indeed, but no more fainting Fits.

THE young Lunelle was allowed to visit her every Week for a whole Year; and as their Understanding was by this Time very much ripened, and their personal Merit very much increased, particularly that of Miss Houtolle, who became daily more charming, they began to think of a Happiness they wanted, and which till now they had not thought of, all their Wishes having been confined to the Pleasure of seeing and speaking with one another; but Lunelle particularly began to have Notions of possessing the Object of his Wishes, and Fears of not attaining to that Happiness, so that every Time he saw his Mistress, his Heart longed after he knew not what, he felt strange Emotions in his Blood; and if he held his Mistress's Hand he would every now and then give it a gentle Squeeze, and then greedily clap it to his Lips, which were long

2

Λ F

di

### Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 285 long glewed to it, and all the Time he seemed to be under a Sort of convulsive Fits.

THE first Time he happened to be in this rapturous Condition, Miss Houtolle was very much alarmed, and asked him hastily if he was well? Indeed my dearest Cousin, answered he fighing, I know not how to describe my Case to you, for I both feel Pleasure and Pain, the Joy of clasping you in my Arms is unexpressible; but when I consider that To-morrow I must leave you, and which is still worse that I must be altogether deprived before it is long of the Happiness I now enjoy, the shocking Thought throws a terrible Damp upon my Spirits, and chills all the Blood in my Veins; but this is not all, nay indeed but trifling compared to the Terror which the Fears of your being made a Nun, or married to another Man, give me; and unless my dearest Cousin will swear to me that she will neither do the one nor the other, I will never look upon a Book again, nor be a Musqueteer, let my Father do or fay what he will.

y

ot

n

·-

ing

ot

ery

red

ige

his

and

hen

rere

ong

I would willingly swear any Thing, said little tender Miss, to oblige you, were it in my Power to keep my Oath; but as Duty obliges me to obey the Will of my Parents, and that a severe Look from my Father or Mother makes me tremble from Head to Foot, I shall never have the Courage to disobey their Orders, so that to promise otherwise

otherwise would be only deceiving you, and my Heart will not allow me to do that; but this I can positively promise, that I will refift as far as possibly I can, and break my Heart when I can do no more.

O! my charming Emilia, cried the transported little Lover, the more agreeable this Declaration is, the more terrible will Abfence be to me, and should I lose you----No, it cannot, must not be, for I should certainly run mad. What fignifies the whole World to me without my dear Emilia, I would live on Bread and Water with her rather than be King of France without her.

WHAT you fay, my dear Coufin, is perfeetly agreeable to what I think, and were I Mistress of a Kingdom it should all be yours; but who can affure me, continued the fighing, that the fine Ladies in Paris will not make you forget the poor Emilia, who perhaps pleases you better just now than any that you have as yet feen, but my dear Cousin you will see Beauties in Paris that far exceed any Thing in this Part of the Country, but I am fure none that will love you better than I do; and if this should happen, I hope you will be fo kind as to let me know that I may propose the Convent; for, though I don't find myfelf much disposed for a religious Life, yet I would much rather chuse to be a Nun than to be married to any other than yourself; and I, cried he, do folemnly

n

h

fa

F

0

b

pı

I

pr

D

folemnly protest and swear, that I will rather suffer Death than consent to be married to any other but my dear *Emilia*, to whom I here plight my Faith, praying Heaven may make me the Object of its Indignation if I do not exactly sulfil my Engagement; and I, said *Emilia*, do renew what I have already promised, and hope that I shall be able to perform it.

THEY continued to see each other weekly for more than a Year and a Half, their Passion increasing daily, and at last it arose to such a Height that Lunelle's Father was forced to send his Son sooner to Paris than he intended; and you may easily guess what a dismal Piece of News it was to the young Lover, when his Father told him that he designed to set out with him in eight Days, and desired he would go and take Leave of Monsieur de Houtelle and his Family.

t

e

11

10

ny

ar

at

he

sve

ap-

me

for,

for

ther

any

do

nnly

HE obeyed without faying one Word, and went along the Road like a Malefactor going to the Place of Execution. The Moment he got an Opportunity of speaking with his Mistress in private: My dear Emilia, said he with a faint and broken Voice, my Father has at last pronounced my Sentence of Death, and in eight Days hence it is to be executed, unless you will condescend to preserve my Life. In short, continued he, I am now come here to bid you Adieu, very probably for ever, since I am very certain my Death must be the Consequence of a Separation

Life. Be affured, my dearest Emilia, that I cannot support this fatal Blow, and if you have any Regard for my Life you will agree to what I am now going to propose to you: The World abounds with Instances of Lovers who to avoid the Persecution and Tyranny of Parents have taken their Flight under Cupid's auspicious Conduct.

WE will steer our Course to Marseilles and take Shipping there for Italy where we will be married, and when our Parents find that the Thing is without Remedy, they will call us home and be reconciled to us, I can fall upon a Way to get as much Money as will bear the Expence of travelling, and support us some Time at Genoa, where we will take up our Residence. Tell me, my dear Emilia, how you like this Project?

My dear Cousin, answered she sighing, and with Tears in her Eyes, the first Part of your Story greatly alarms my Heart, and the latter Part my Virtue; and the Question is, whether I shall or ought to yield to the Impulses of the one or the other? If I lose you I am unhappy that's most certain, but then I neither disobey my Parents, nor expose my Reputation; and rather than do either the one or the other I would chuse to break my Heart; and add mine too, cried he interrupting her. You don't love me, I see it plainly, continued he bursting into Tears,

ir

t)

of Co

of

fo

do

lef

Tears, you ratify my Father's Sentence, and 'tis in vain for me to oppose my unhappy Fate.

Upon which he started from his Chair, and with Death painted on his Countenance exclaimed in a most lamentable Manner: O Heavens! what have I done to be thus cruelly treated! and then addressing himself to his Mistress, Farewel lovely but too cruel Emilia, since you look upon Marriage without the Consent of Parents to be a more terrible Thing than your own and my Death; I must not press it farther, but after I am dead and gone remember that your Delicacy cut my Thread of Life.

5.

y

re

e,

0-

ng,

of

the

1 15,

Imlose

but

ex-

do

e to

cried

me,

into

ears,

ALAS! my dear Cousin, said she, almost half dead, how cruel and unjust are you to accuse me in this Manner; is a Woman who deviates in the least from the strict Obedience which she owes to those who gave her Birth capable of being obedient to a Husband? We are both too young to think of entering into a State that requires a good Stock of Understanding and Discretion to carry us through the Rubs of Life.

My Mother often tells me that the Duties of a Wife are severe and painful, by being constantly obliged to subject her Will to that of her Husband, who while he is passionate'y fond of her, finds nothing wrong that she does; but, says she, Enjoyment by Degrees lessens Ardour in the Male Sex, and has the Vol. I.

contrary Effect in Women; and as this is generally the Case, a Woman has Indifference and Coldness in a Husband to struggle with, and perhaps her very Endeavours to please may be often disagreeable to him: This Picture of Matrimony, I own, frightens me; however I have such an Affection for you, my dear Cousin, that with the Approbation of my Parents, without which I should think myself guilty of a Crime, I should risk all the Changes and Chances that may happen in the married State; and I should fill have, in the worst of Events, the Satisfaction to think that my Unhappiness was not intirely the Work of my own doing.

A little Absence, though it were not necessary for your Education, will put your Heart and mine to Proofs which they really ought to go through, before we unite them for ever by a Sacramental Tie; if yours can withstand the Temptations of Paris, and remain constant where there is so many fine Women and such Variety of Pleasures, I shall in that Case be less apprehensive of its changing; but that Trial is necessary for us both, and therefore, my dear Cousin, I would beg of you to comply with your Father's Will, without shewing the least Reluctance.

As for me, when I affure you of the Constancy of my Inclination, there's no great Merit in it, because I shall have no Oppor-

CONTRACTOR

tunity

1 10 .

f

V

n

a

to

it

y

a

7

0

T

21

tunity of changing my Sentiments, and I again reiterate my Promise, and make this Addition to it, that if 'tis lest to my Choice, I will preser a Convent to any other Man but yourself, which is all that you can or ought to require of a Girl who would take Care of her Reputation, and conduct herself by the Rules of Modesty and Virtue, without which I think she cannot preserve the Esteem even of a Lover.

e

at

e-

out

lly

for

can

refine

, I

r us

ould

ner's

·luc-

the

great

ppor-

unit

WELE, well, my dear Emilia said the afflicted Youth, I find it is in vain to combat your Notions of Honour and Virtue; and I own that though they oppose what would have made me happy, the Motives on which they are founded fatisfy my Reason, at the fame Time that they pinch my Heart; and as my Happiness could not be perfect without fancying at least that yours were so too, I will obey my Father's or-rather your Com-mands; but remember, my dearest Emilia, that if my Heart remains constant to you, amidst all the Dangers and Temptations, with which you tell me it will be furrounded at Paris, you are under an Engagement not to bestow yours on any other; for I confess it would not give me so much Pain to see you a Nun as the Wife of another Man; and if your Friendship for me can but inspire you with fo much Refolution as to prefer a Convent to any Match that may offer, I hope our Parents will be forced to consent to our Union, rather than allow you to be a Nun and me to be a Friar; for I swear by all C c 2 that:

## 292 The TRAVELS of

that is facred, that when you take the Veil I will take the Frock.

Your Father indeed will get rid of a Daughter at an easier Rate by your being shut up in a Cloister, than if you were to be married, and therefore will not give himself perhaps much Trouble about it; but as mine has mighty Schemes of pushing me in the Army and making a Man of Consequence of me, as he often says, he will never consent to my being a Monk, and I am very sully resolved to be nothing else without Emilia.

WHEN they had thus settled Matters they parted with Concern indeed, but not with fuch Floods of Tears as Lovers usually shed upon such Occasions. Miss Emilia was difcreet and modest, which prevented her from faying what her Heart felt at this Separation, and Lunelle thought his Project was infallible, but he was fadly deceived; for both their Fathers being equally averse to this Match from different Motives, resolved to prevent all farther Correspondence between their Children; for which Reason Care was taken to intercept all the Letters that Lunelle wrote to his Miffress from Paris, and some of her's to him complaining of his Silence, and of her prophetic Fears proving but too true.

Lunelle thought his Mistress had abandoned him, and she had the same Opinion of his Infidelity, which created a mutual Sort of Resent-

12.531

h

e

u

Resentment, but did not extinguish their Flame; for nothing could make him forget his Emilia, and Lunelle was ever in her Thoughts, which their Parents eafily perceived by the Manner of their Writing, and concluded that an Attachment that was Proof against Absence, and a seeming Indifference on both Sides, at their Age, could not be effaced but by depriving them of all Hopes; for which Reason Monsteur de Houtolle refolved to make his Daughter a Nun, and with that View carried her directly to a Convent in Toulouze, where he had a Sister who was a Nun, and having told her the whole Story of his Daughter's Amours with Lunelle, gave her strict Charge not to let her. write to him at any Rate, which was exactly complied with, and poor Miss Emilia confined till she was of Age to begin her Year of Noviciat, and thereafter to pronounce the fatal Formula, and for ever renounce the World; which she did with surprizing Resolution, though her Heart was fill engaged to her Coufin, and though the was very certain that fhe would be wretched and miserable while she lived, unless Providence affisted her in a miraculous Manier.

WHEN young Lunelle had passed not only his Studies at the College, and Exercises at he Accademy for Riding, but likewise had een three Years in the Corps of the Musueteers, he wrote his Father very pressing Letters to allow him to come and fee him,

Cc 3

doned of his ort of efent-

n

.

11

ut

ey

red

difmo:

ion,

ble,

Fa-

rom

far-

ren;

rcept

his

's to f her but he still put him off by some Excuse or other till his Mistress was received a Nun; after which, instead of allowing his Son to come to the Country, he went himself to Paris, with a Design to purchase a Troop of Horse for him.

You may believe that his Cousin was among the first Persons he enquired for; but how great was his Consternation when he understood that she had taken on the Veil, he turned pale as Death, and on a fudden funk down at his Father's Feet in a deep fainting Fit, in which he continued for above an Hour. The old Gentleman was fo terribly frightned that he heartily repented what he had told him, and even of the Part he had acted to get his Mistress made a Nun.

THE young Gentleman however, at last, recovered, and told his Father very plainly, that he did not doubt but that his Coulin had been forced to be a Nun, and that her Father had been prompted to facrifice her at his Desire, but added, that their Cruely would not be confined wholly to her but must reach him too; for, continued he, am under the most solemn Engagement, that if she's forced to take on the Habit, I will follow her Example, fince I can propose no Happiness in the World after I have lost all Hopes of possessing her; and you had better lay yourself out to get another Wife, and other Sons to succeed you, fince you must no longer think of me as a Man who is to per-

petuate

L

# Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 295

petuate your Name; I am fixed in my Refolution and no Power on Earth shall make me retract: What a barbarous Thing is it in Parents, cried he transported with Rage, rather to study their own ambitious Views than the Happiness or Satisfaction of their Children!

ıt

-

nk

ng

an

he

nad

aft,

aly,

ufin

her

r at

elty

but

e, I

that

will

e no

ft all

etter

and

of no

per-

tuate

'Tis a grand Mistake to imagine that what they do proceeds from Tenderness; if this were the Case would they make them miserable? No, they only consult their own Caprice, and will not allow their Children to be happy, if what they propose clashes in the least with their Notions of Felicity; or rather their whole Aim is to pleafe themselves, without having any Regard to the Satisfaction of the Persons who are most immediately concerned, and all this forfooth because you are the Instruments of our Existence; but with all due Deference to you. Sir, as my Father, the Satisfaction of Senfuality was the Motive of your begetting me. and confequently I am less obliged to you for contributing to bring me into Existence than for your Care of me fince I have been in the World, but even that Obligation is cancelled by doing what must make me wretched during the Remainder of my Life; for I have a mortal Aversion to a Cloister, and yet by my Oath, which no Authority upon Earth shall make me break, I am condemned to it; so that Monsieur de Houtolle and you have wantonly facrificed poor Emiha, and I hope you'll finish your Work by witneffing witnessing my renouncing all Commerce with the World, my own Father not excepted; but first of all I will go to that fatal Prison where her cruel Parents have enclosed her, that I may learn from her own Mouth whether her Sacrifice is voluntary or not.

I am very suspicious of hearing a very black and melancholy Story, but let it be what it will I am refolved to be at the Bottom of it, and if there has been Violence used, all France shall know it; so that my Advice to you, Sir, upon the whole, is, to dispose of the Troop which you tell me you have purchased for me in the Queen's Regiment; because, if Emilia is by her own Choice a Nun, I will leave France, and if the has been forced, I will not only let the King but the whole Kingdom know the Cruelty of her Parents, and demand Redress: With that he started up, made his Father a Bow (who was fo confounded that he could not pronounce a fingle Word ) walked out of the House where they were, and took Post that Moment for Youlouze, where his Prefence, you may believe, strangely surprized Miss Emilia now Sifter Rose. westehed during the Remainder of my life

THEIR first Discourse was much upon the Referve and Cold, each of them attributing inconstancy to the other; but at last they came to a full Explication, and to a full Knowledge of the Cruelty of their ve stro W appropriate the part over Parents

witneffine

#### Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 297

Parents, who had intercepted all their Letters, and forced Emilia to be a Nun: This threw Lunelle into a terrible Fit of Rage and Fury; he had no farther Regard for her Father nor his own, but openly called them Tygers and Monsters who did not deserve to breath in christian Air, and what augmented his Fury was the Beauty of his Mistress now a Woman formed, and so charming in the Nun's Habit that his Passion became a thousand times stronger than ever it had been.

The disconsolate Nun wept much but said little, tho' her Lover could easily perceive, by that little, that she was far from being content with her Condition, and that she still loved him; which made him ask her hastily if she would not willingly be relieved from her Vows, she answered, Sighing, that it was needless to explain herself upon that Head, since she believed it was a Thing impossible.

2

le

)--

u

ia

157

on

it-

at

to

eir

nts

No, no, my dear Emilia, cried he, I will go and throw myfelf at the Kings Feet, tell him all our Story and humbly supplicate the royal Authority against the barbarous cruelty of unnatural Parents; but if this should not succeed, will you not consent to my delivering you from this horrid Prison, and to our seeking a Sanctuary in some foreign Country? Alas! my dear Cousin, answered she, what do you mean by such a Proposal, supposing the Thing were practicable, which I can not conceive it to be? what

How easie is it to reason in this cool Manner, cried he in a Melancholy Tone, when your Heart feels not the Power of Love as mine does, but, my dearest Emiha, had I no other Obstacles to combate but what offer on the Side of your Reputation, I think they might be eafily answered. The World, unjust as it is, would be far from condemning a Woman for escaping from a Prison into which her Parents had inhumanely thrown her against her Will, and forced her to commit a Sacrilege, by declaring in the Presence of God and those who were Witnesses that her Vows were voluntary, when at the same Time she was conscious to herfelf

#### Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 299

felf that her Heart gave the Lie to her Tongue, and by protesting that her inclination and nothing elfe was what induced her to embrace the religious Life, the she was sensible that the had no Vocation to it, and would be miserable in a Profession to which her Mind was quite averse. The Thoughts of your Situation, added he, make me tremble, and fure your Conscience must tell you every Time you approach the Altar, that Heaven rejects the Prayers of a Person who has in the Face of the Sun called upon it to witness an Untruth.

O Emilia! think of the Danger that furrounds you, and do not let a mistaken Notion of your Duty to an Earthly Parent come in Competition with what you owe to your Heavenly Father; or, rather, make an Attonement for the Crime that you have been guilty of, by speedily abandoning this Place, and a Profession to which you have no Call, and in which without a Miracle you must be wretched while you live, and - I dare not fay the rest. give them.

e

n

h

to

uc

loc

ne,

of

mi-

but on,

The

rom

m a

ane-

rced

the !

Wit-

when her-(elf

Emilia listened to him with great Attention, and when the found that he had ended his Sermon, I will readily agree with you, faid the, that I have been guilty of Dissimulation which is a heinous Crime; but is not Heaven merciful, and are we not affured that when the worst of Sinners repent they will find Favour?

Favour? May not I therefore, without Prefumption, hope, that by strictly observing the Rules of my Order, and leading a Life pure and innocent, Providence, after a fuffacient Trial of my Patience and Perseverance, in imploring Night and Day the Divine Affistance, will at last be propitious? but you my dear Cousin who act the Part already of Director, fince you have no Vocation to the Monastick State, can you with Safety follow my Example, and would it not be a leffer Crime to break your Oath of being a Monk, which was rash and inconsiderate, than deliberately to engage yourfelf in Vows which are directly contrary to your Intention, and which no body forces you to come under, as in my Case? You'll, no doubt fay that we are to disobey the whole World rather than to offend God; but I thought my Conscience discharged, when I told my Father and Mother that I had no Inclination to be a Nun; and I cannot but think that a great Part of the Crime lies at their Door, which I pray Heaven may forgive them.

Your Reasons triumph Emilia, but my Passion still subsists; and notwithstanding your Arguments, which are, I acknowledge, not easily to be answered, I will either turn Monk, or abandon for ever my native Country, unless you give me Leave to use all my Endeavours to get you relieved of your Vows, from the Motive of their being invo-

I

Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 301 involuntary, to which after long and strong Intreaties she consented.

Lunelle set out next Day, and I shall leave him riding Post to Paris, with a Lover's Hast, and tell you how Matters went with Emilia, who had no sooner lost Sight of her Lover, whose Presence, notwithstanding her Veil and Vows, had raised terrible Commotions in her poor distracted Heart, than she repeated her Prayers; but Lunelle was always in her Mind, and the more she endeavoured to divert her Thoughts from him, the less she succeeded; she invoked all the Saints, but in vain; Lunelle was always uppermost, and she could think of nothing else.

Sometimes the would burft forth into Tears, complain of the Cruelty of her Parents, and lament her unhappy Fate, then chide herfelf for entertaining fuch Thoughts, which could, indeed, make her Condition more wretched, but give her no Relief; I am here for Life, would she sometimes say, I have folemnly fworn to have no Communication with the World or Men, what Folly, what Madness possesses thee poor filly unthinking Emilia; or, rather, what guilty Thoughts take up thy Mind, O! wicked Sister Rose? As the former I find I must love him, and as the latter I ought to forget him; how shall I reconcile my double felf? Shall I leave the Convent and marry Lunelle, is that right? I fear not. Shall I Vol. I. Dd continue

n

1-

ny

UT

ng

10-

## 302 The TRAVELS of

continue in it and still love him? Worse and worse. What then? Die a Martyr to the Cruelty of Parents and Tyranny of Love, and trust to the Mercy of God, who knows the Frailties of human Nature, and will, I hope, accept of my hearty and sincere Wishes, to arrive at a higher Pitch of Virtue than what the unhappy Situation of my Mind permits me to reach.

As she was thus wrapt up in a deep Contemplation, I mean as she was talking to herfelf (to which the genteel Term would have been Soliloquy, but I did not think of it in Time) her Aunt, who you may remember I told you was a Nun in the same Convent, came into her Cell, and was furprized to find her drowned in Tears, imagining from her resolute Behaviour, at her Reception, that the had got the better of her Childish Inclination; but recollecting that Lunelle had lately paid her a Vifit, the became very fufpicious, and refolved to penetrate into her Secret, not so much out of Curiofity as with a Delign to serve her; for you must know that this Lady had been made a Nun too very much against her Will, and was very much against her Brother's facrificing his Daughter as his Father had done her, though she appeared to Emilia to be as keen for it as her Father, fo that they mutually endeavoured to conceal their real Sentiments from one another; but the Aunt was now resolved to take off the Mask, and to appear to her Niece what

k

b

in

h

F

th

Pr

ho

ca

ac

# Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 303

what she really was, in hopes of an equivalent Confidence in the young Nun.

I am furprized, and very much concerned, my dear Niece, faid she a little after she came in, to fee you under so deep a Melancholy, which is but too visible in your Eyes and Countenance not to alarm me; as we are by ourselves, continued she, I shall not Sifter you, according to the usual Practice in this Community; and I am refolved, at prefent, not only to lay aside that Formality, but to open my Heart to you, in hopes that you will place an equal Confidence in me, upon this Assurance, that if it is not in my Power to ferve you, your Secret shall be enclosed in my Breast; and though we, perhaps, may be equally incapable to affift one another, and that our Misfortunes are not to be remedied, yet there is a certain Confolation in having a Friend, to whom we can communicate our most fecret Thoughts: To shew you that I am fincere, and to lead you the Way, know, my dear Niece, that I am far from being what I appear, and that I have an insuperable Aversion to the Life we lead here.

7

ad

er

th

erv

ich

ter

ap.

ired

one d

liece

what

I was educated in this Convent; and my Father, who designed me from my Birth to the religious State, recommended to the Prioress and Nuns, to try all their Art to hook me into their Number; and as they caressed and stattered me without Measure, according to their laudable Custom when Dd 2 they

they find it will be their Interest, I greedily swallowed the Bait, believing, as they told me, that the Moment I pronounced the fatal Vow, I would find my Mind exalted to a State of Happiness, little inferior to that of Angels; but I soon found it debased lower than can be expressed, by severe Usage and slavish Drudgeries, in serving the very Nuns who had before cajolled me as if I had been a Princess; and who now for the turning of a Straw treat me with such Contempt and Rigour, that I have not passed one Day these twelve Years without twelve Times wishing for Death, as the only Thing that can terminate my Misery.

I faw, with great Grief, that your Father, upon bringing you here, intended to facrifice you to Family Confiderations as mine had done me; nay, he even told me fo, but I durst not for my Life dissuade you from taking the Road that led me to my Ruin; on the contrary, the Priorefs told me with her usual Severity, that she expected I would use all my Interest with you as a Relation, adding, that if you shewed the least Reluctance, she would attribute it to me, and punish me in a Manner that would make me repent my Folly as long as I lived; and as I had already more than once felt the Effects of her Rage, Fear made me utter with my Lips what my Heart difclaimed.

W

L

In short, my dear Niece, you know what fine Things I told you about the Advantages. of being a Nun, it was all Deceit, all Forgery, as you will foon find by a fatal Experience, and you must prepare yourself for Hardships and Miseries, from which you have been hitherto exempted. Alas! poor Child, continued she sighing and shedding Tears, how will that delicate Body of thine go through the flavish Drudgeries that are preparing for it! and how it grieves my Heart to think that I cannot ferve thee otherwife than by pitying thy unhappy Fate! This you may think is anticipating your Misfortunes and punishing you before the Time, but I have my Reasons, and will explain them, if I find that you lay your Heart open to me as I have done mine to

Poor Sifter Rose was so terrified with this dismal Picture of Futurity, that she trembled from Head to Foot, and related the whole Passages of her Life as if she had been upon Oath before a Judge, not forgetting what had passed between Lunelle and her at their last Interview, and upon what Designa he returned to Paris.

d I -

n

er

fe

d-

C-

nd

ke

d ; felt

me

dif-

IN

WHEN the had ended her Narration, my dear Niece, faid the Aunt, embracing her, were I in your Case I should not hesitate one: Moment upon what I was to do; if your Lover can get you relieved of your Vows, a

Dd 3

Thing which I scarce believe practicable, I fancy you'll willingly accept of him for your Husband; but suppose the Thing is refused. not fo much upon your Account as upon other Confiderations which regard many Families in France; and on the other Hand. supposing that your Lover proposed to carry you off without Authority or Leave. would you confent to make an Elopement with him, and by that Means not only enjoy. the Man you love, but likewife avoid the terrible Life that you must lead here?

This Question terribly puzzled our young Nun, her Notions of Virtue were fo ftrict that she could not think of running away with a Man without blushing, but on the other Hand she could not think of what her Aunt had told her without trembling; in this Dilemma she knew not what to fay, and all she could get out at last was: My dear Aunt, what would you do were you in my Case? Why, make as little Difficulty, Child, to break Vows that I was forced to make, as I would to break an Oath which a Highway-man should force me to take with a Pistol at my Breast; and why don't you then make your Escape from this Place, cried the Niece, fince you think it no Crime, and fince in any Situation of Life you could not be fo unhappy as you are here?

THE Case is very different betwixt you and me, faid the Aunt. You are young,

ł

f

you love a Man who adores you, and is willing at all Events to marry you; I'm old and neither have a Lover nor can expect a Husband, so that to fly into some Foreign Country where the Roman Catholick Religion is not established, without Money or Friends and without any Intention of changing my Religion which I could do upon no Confideration, what could I expect to be but what I am here, a menial Servant or rather a Slave? And as I must be an absolute Stranger in any Place to which I fled for Sanctuary, People might reasonably imagine that I had left my Country for fome bad Action, and would be afraid even to harbour me in their Houses, not believing a Word of my Story; so that it would be Madness in me to leave even this unhappy Place, and Prudence in you which no Mortal who has the least Share of common Sense or Humanity can find Fault with; and therefore my Advice to you is not to make yourself miferable while you live, by a chimerical Delicacy, if your Lover will take his Chance with you; and but here they were interrupted by the Arrival of the Prioress who, with a stern Countenance, reprimanded both the Aunt and the Niece for spending their Time in idle Chit-Chat; for you Sifter Dorothy, faid she, you know your Task; and if it be not performed at a precise Minute, you and I shall talk; and as for you Sifter Rose, you have hitherto had too much idle Time upon your Hands, but I shall very foon contrive Business for you; in the mean

d

11

Y

d,

as

h-

2

no

ce,

no

are

you

you

## 308 The TRAVELS of

Time go to the Oratory and remain there till farther Orders; where I shall leave her for a While and follow Lunelle to Paris.

HE rode Night and Day, or rather flew on the Wings of Love, but needed not to have been in such Haste; for the he threw himself at the King's Feet, when he presented his Petition, and joined to his own Interest that of his Friends; made his Court to Cardinals, Bishops, Jesuits, Monks, and Ladies, he might have as well pulled down the Moon with his Teeth as to have got what he wanted; mad with this Dissapointment and ashamed to stay at Paris after such a Rebuss, he retook the Road to Toulouze, fully resolved to carry off his Mistress if she would constent.

By the Time he returned, for you must know that he did not push so hard back as he had done in going to Paris, poor Sifter Rose was entering upon the Accomplishment of her Aunt's Predictions, and was fo terrified with the Prospect of worse fill to come, that nothing was wanting but her Lovers Presence to determine her Refolution, and upon his Arrival he found her much more tractable than before; she gave him an exact Account of what had paffed between her Aunt and her, and did not conceal the Severities of the Prioress which she expected would encrease daily rather than diminish. Imagine, if you can, the Excess of Lunelle's Joy, for I can not find Terms proper to describe it. I wish, Sir, added she fmiling,

n

is

in

ar

fmiling, and addressing herself to the Count de Saluce, you would help me out with this Part of my Story, for when I look at your Lady I can not but conclude that you are perfectly acquainted with what we call Tranfports of Joy in a Lover, and tho' we have many Instances of Female Hearts deeply smitten, and which of Course must be sensible of Joy on a happy Turn, yet the Author of Nature, as he has endowed us with an Innocence and Modesty superior, in my Opinion, to that of the Male Sex, we are not fo apt to break out into the tumultuous and rapturous Transports of Grief or Joy as the Men, which may be owing to this too as well as Modesty, that generally speaking the Passions are not so strong in us as in the other Sex, otherwise when Love steals into our Hearts, neither our Virtue, Decorum, nor even our Pride could restrain the Violence of our Defires, and we should become a Purchase the less agreeable as it would be obtained without the least Pains or Trouble; and were this Failing joined to the other Imperfections, to which we are by Nature fubjected, a Pismire, an Insect would be a happier Creature than a Woman.

f

15

er

as

(e

ut

e-

ve

red

nshe

han

Ex-

rins

the

ing,

MADAM, answered the Count smiling, you could not have adressed yourself to a Man whose Experience in Grief and Joy exceeds mine; but this Lady, pointing to his Spouse, is a better Judge than I, how far the Passions insluence the Female Sex and I must submit my Judgment to her's in this Point; and I, said the Countess, must beg Leave to defer

### 310 The TRAVELS of

defer giving mine till Mademoiselle has finished her Narration which I hope she will continue without farther Interruption.

Miss made an Obeifance and proceeded thus in her Story: Lunelle was in fuch Raptures that he could find no Words to express his Joy, but his Eyes spoke a Language very intelligible to his Mistress; and after they had for fome Moments darted throw the Grate those Glances peculiar only to Lovers, and fealed their Agreement with mutual Protestations (for you must know that the Grate was fo closely barred they could not join Hands) Emilia, for I think I must no more call her Sifter Rose, begged of her Lover to retire to prevent Suspicion (for I believe you all know that Curiofity reigns no where more than in a Convent; and the Priores of this had a very watchful Eye upon all her Nuns, particularly Rose and her Aunt) and to return three Days after at the same Hour to concert with her Aunt the proper Measures for her Deliverance.

You may believe he was very punctual and they had Abundance of Chat which I shall not repeat, only tell you, that for many weighty Reasons, the Principal where of was Want of Money, the Execution of their Project was to be deferred for fix Months, during which Lunelle was to scrape together all the Cash that he possibly could; and though fix Months were fix Centuries, according to his Calculation, and perhaps not much less in her way of counting; yet by the

f

the Aunt's Remonstrances, who was a Woman of Sense, they yielded to Necessity, and Lunelle, after a passionate and tender Adieu, accompanied with all the Protestations usual on such Occasions, took Post and galloped back to Paris, where he had lest his Father, and whom he sound under great Concern for his Absence, and ready to return to his own Country.

AFTER some Excuses for leaving the Town without his Permission: Sir, said he, I hope my Transgression will obtain your Pardon, when I tell you that it has produced a very good Effect, no less than an intire Cure of the soolish Passion which I had for my Cousin, and that I am now ready to obey your Orders in every Respect.

1

al

for

re-

of

fix

ape

ld;

ries,

not

t by

the

THE old Gentleman was so overjoyed, that he embraced him with Tears in his Eyes, and told him, he heartily forgave what was past, and in a few Days they parted the best Friends in the World; old Lunelle taking the Road to Languedoc, and the young Gentleman to Lifle in Flanders to take Posfession of his Troop; where he remained three Months; and during that Time affected a bad State of Health fo artfully that he obtained Permission at Court, to dispose of his Troop as he bought it, and to retire to his Father's House, who, persuaded as the rest of the World of the Truth of his Indisposition, concurred in procuring his Dismisfion, and pressed him to return home as soon as possible, which he did with the Money of his Commission in his Pocket, though he told his Father he was only to receive it from his Successor, Nephew to the Comptrollergeneral, in five or fix Months; which the old Gentleman believed, and was very easy about the Money when he had his Son about him, and hoped that his native Air would recover him.

Our Enamorato found Means to get a Billet conveyed to his Mistress, giving her Notice of his Arrival, and of every Step he had taken, but that Reasons, which she should know in due Time, obliged him to remain some Weeks at his Father's before he offered to pay her a Visit; in the mean Time he intreated, that her Aunt and she would examine the Garden Walls, and six upon the most convenient Place for getting over by Means of a Ladder of Ropes which he would take Care to provide.

He recovered furprifingly, which his Father attributed to the Benefit of his native Air; and as he never once mentioned his Cousin's Name for three Weeks after his Arrival, the old Gentleman concluded that he had quite forgot her, which gave him great Joy; and he was considering out of what Family in the Country he should get him a Wife, little thinking that his Son was to give him no Trouble that way, but such a Load of Grief that soon brought him to his Grave and himself into a State of Want and Misery, which

01

W

H

he hi

W

which was a terrible Draw-back, some Years after, upon the Happiness which he proposed to himself in the married State.

He privately borrowed to the Tune of Ten thousand Livres from several of his Father's Friends and Relations, to make up, as he pretended, the Money of his Commission; a Part whereof he had lost at Play in Paris, and was unwilling to let his Father know of it.

HE then bought a Post Chaise at Toulouze, with a Couple of Horses, and took Bills of Exchange on Lyons and Geneva, except for what was necessary to bear his Expences to the last Place, where he designed to go, judging it safer there than in Italy, where the Power of the Pope might reach him, and perhaps undo all again.

e

X

ner

r:

n's

al,

had

by;

nily

ife,

him

1 of

and

fery, hich When every thing was ready for executing this unhappy Project, he told his Father that he would go and pass two or three Days with a young Counsellor of the Parliament of Toulouze who was his Friend, to which the old Gentleman readily consented, and ordered two of his Horses to be got ready, one for the Son, and another for the Servant who was to attend him and bring back the Horses, all which was accordingly done; and he sent Word to his Mistress, who had given him Notice before what Part of the Garden Wall was most proper to be stormed, to hold Vol. I.

E e

## 314 The TRAVELS of

herself ready about Eleven o'Clock at Night, and that she should find him upon the Top of the Wall, at that Hour, ready to receive her.

I shall not trouble you with the Manner of his fixing the Ladder, and how he on his Side mounted the Wall, and she on her's, but only tell you that she got fairly off, and away they marched; when they had got sive or six Miles from the Convent to a Place where he could get Post Horses, he ordered two to be put to his Chaise, and one for his Servant to ride, and sold his own two Horses to the Post-master, at what he would give him for them, which to be sure was not near the Value.

Night and Day till they arrived at Lyons, where they were directly married; and next Morning set out for Geneva about thirty Leagues distant, where they arrived without any bad Rencounter, and where I shall leave them in the full Fruition of what the Loves call extatick Bliss, and while it lasts may be properly enough termed so.

But here's the Bane of human Life,
That what we wish for most
Is, by Fruition Maid or Wise,
No sooner got than lost.

Manual of the Ma

Else Marriage would a Heaven be, where happy Days would flow; But ah! how feldom do we fee, A greater Cuife below.

e

es

ion

ms,

ext

irty

out

eave

vers

y be

Ell

Rousseau, cried the Count disdainfully, who is the Author of this little fatyrical Stroke against Marriage, was a bitter Enemy to that State, and judged of every body by himfelf: I own, that where a Marriage has no other Foundation but the Gratification of the fenfual Appetite, that may fron be cloyed; the same Object becomes too familiar, and ten to one breeds Difgust, which is the Preamble to Difcord and all the Evils that attend Unions which are not founded upon Esteem as well as Love; he has laid down, however, too general a Maxim, and I think, besides myself, I could instance many Exceptions from the Rule; but Madam, added he, turning to Miss Courbon, I hope you'll pardon this Interruption, and do us the Favour to go on with your Story, of which, by fome Infinuations that you dropt at the Beginning, I'm afraid the Sequel will support the Poet's Opinion.

By no Means, answered Miss, for tho' what remains opens a very different Scene from what is past, yet there appears no Change of Sentiments from Disgust, but an Alteration of Temper in the Husband from the terrible

E e 2.

Appre-

## 316 The TRAVELS of

Apprehensions of being reduced to low Circumstances. Before I enter upon this Melancholy Part of my Story, which I have no Pleasure in repeating, I shall tell you what happened in France upon their Elopement.

THE Convent you may believe was foon in an Uproar, and a Messenger dispatched to Monsieur de Houtolle's, to acquaint him that his Daughter had made her Escape; upon which he took Horse and went directly to Monsieur de Lunelle's, and understanding that his Son was at Toulouze, he became very suspicious that he had carried his Daughter off, but the Father could not believe it.

A Messenger was immediately dispatched to the Counsellor, at whose House he imagined his Son was, but he had neither seen him, nor heard of his being in Town, which threw the two Fathers into a terrible Consternation.

Houtolle returned home very much afflicted for the Disgrace, as he termed it, which his Daughter had brought upon the Family; and the poor old Lunelle could neither eat not sleep for the Loss of his Son.

but at last Houtolle received a Letter from his Daughter, dated from Geneva, of which the Person who told me the Story having a Copy, the Singularity of it made me think it worth transcribing; and if you have any Curiosity

## Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 317

to fee how Sister Rose vindicates this Fauxpas, I will go up to my Chamber and bring
it. By all Means, cried the Countes, I am
mighty curious to see how she justifies her
Conduct. Miss flew up Stairs, and was
back in a Moment with a Paper in her
Hand, in which she read the following
Words.



COPY of Madam de Lunelle's Letter to her Father from Geneva.

SIR,

en

ch

n.

ted

his

and

WS;

n his

the

copy,

worth

iofity

ITTHEN Children are really guilty of an Offence to their Parents, the Laws of God and Man oblige them to make proper Atonement; you will, no doubt, hink I am criminal in the highest Degree, ind your Indignation will bear a due Proporion to the Opinion you have of my Conuct; but would you coolly consider the ale, you must of Necessity allow that, pon a fair Representation of it, you would e more liable to publick Censure than I. ar be it from me to fet Limits or prescribe ules to paternal Authority; but this r I may fafely venture to fay, that when om Views of preserving the whole of an state to the eldest Son, though very often a ake and a Profligate, the other Sons and anghters are condemned to the Monastick

Ee 3

State.

### 318 The TRAVELS of

State, without confulting their Inclination, nay, even though they declare their Aversion to it; Parents, in that Case, take a Power upon them which God and Nature never gave them, and the Children cannot be supposed to be under any Tie by Vows which they are forced to make, and which consequently they may and indeed ought to break as much as an Oath extorted by Violence, and threatened Death in case of a Refusal.

You are sensible, Sir, that the Convent was my Aversion, and that my Heart gave the Lie to my Tongue in pronouncing the satal Formula; who then was guilty of the Sacrilege, for such sure it must be, and whose Conscience ought it to affect yours or mine?

I was dragged to the Altar, and offered up an involuntary Victim, which certainly made the Sacrifice abominable in the Sight of God; but the Crime lies at the Door of those whe forced me to take on Vows which were as Daggers to my Heart when I pronounced them, not having the Vocation necessary for a Person who embraces a religious State: What I pronounced went no farther than my Lips, and when the Heart does not go along, what can it be called but juggling with Heaven; and how could I expect any Affistance from above, to carry me through the Hardthips and Severities of a religious Life, to which I had an invincible Abhorrence at first, and

### Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 319

and found myself no better disposed during the whole Time I was in the Convent? As this was the Case what could I propose to myself by remaining in it? Nothing, sure, but a wretched Life in this World, and terrible Apprehensions of a dreadful Futurity.

THESE were the Motives, Sir, that induced me to leave it in the Manner I have done; and whether they will be fatisfactory to you I know not, but I am fure they are to my own Conscience, which I now find eased of a heavy Load; and perceive already that my Heart joins with my Tongue, in offering up my Prayers to Heaven, which to me is a convincing Argument that it approves of what I have done.

I am persuaded that the Public, and very probably you yourfelf too, will be apt to attribute my Flight to a quite different Cause than what I alledge; but give me Leave to affure you, that though I loved Lunelle, which I think I may now, as he is my Hufband, confess without Breach of Modesty, I should certainly have facrificed my Inclination to please you and a censorious World, had I found my Heart disposed to fulfil the Duties of my Order; but as it was quite cold, or rather averse to the religious Life, I look upon forced Devotion to be so far from being meritorious, that I dreaded an immediate Punishment from Heaven, even in the very Acts of Worship and Adoration, as they were

d-

to

ft,

nd

were not performed with Sincerity and Ardour, which I affure you was a stronger Motive for my leaving the Convent than the Sollicitations of a Man whom I own I loved.

I make no doubt but that my Husband and I have by this Step brought ourselves in Disgrace both with Church and State, the former will thunder out Excommunication, and the latter pronounce a Sentence of Death at least against him for carrying off a Nun; such a Sentence may be agreeable to human Laws, but not, I am sure, to divine in our Case; for I think nothing can be a more palpable Violation of them than to force me to take on Vows, to which I solemnly declared my Dissent, and therefore could not think myself bound to the Performance of them, nor guilty of any Crime in the Breach of such involuntary Engagements.

I think myself in Duty bound to give you this Account of my Sentiments and Situation; and though it will, very probably, rather augment than diminish your Resentment, for Reasons which cannot but be disagreeable to you to read or me to write, since it is but ripping up an old Sore, yet I could not be easy with myself till I did it, and not only now, but in all the Occurrences of my Life, shall always make it my Study to perform what I owe to him who gave me Being, whatever Returns I may meet with from his Indifference; and in this fixed Resolution give

give me Leave to affure you of my Love and Respect, and that no Behaviour of yours, however rigorous and unkind, shall ever inspire me with other Sentiments than what are confistent with the Character which I affume of being while I live,

> Your most obedient and affectionate Daughter, EMILIA DE LUNELLE.

tor emecal her ewn I end and

As Family Confiderations had induced Houtolle to make his Daughter a Nun, he confidered that the Step she had now taken was a fair Pretence for his abandoning her as much as if the had been nothing to him, and he was therefore pretty easy upon the Matter, which was not the Case of poor old Lunelle, who was so thunderstruck with the News that he fell fick, and died in a Fortnight after, and his Estate, upon account of his Son's being declared Fugitive and hanged in Effigy, forfeited to the Crown.

1

u

1-

1-

it, le

ut

be

ily

fe,

rm

ng,

his

ion rive

This was, you may believe, difmal News to the young Gentleman and his Lady; and as one Misfortune is generally the Preamble to another, Mr. Desmarets a Banker at Geneva, into whose Hands he had placed all his Stock of Money to a Triffle, failed for a very large Sum, and abfconded till he had compounded

with

with his Creditors at one Third of their Debts.

This Catastrophe was the more severe as it was intirely unexpected, and in Spite of all Lunelle's Endeavours to support it with a good Grace, the Impression it made on him appeared in his Behaviour and Looks; he was often plunged into a Melancholy Thoughtfulness which his Wise observed, and tho she dreaded as much the Consequences of this Disaster as her Husband, yet she endeavoured to conceal her own Fears and to dissipate his by her tender Caresses.

Some Months after he received his Proportion from tle Banker, and having been bred to no Business, he thought the best Way of laying out his little Fund, was to purchase a Commission with it in some foreign Service; but two Reasons made him delay the Execution of his Delign; the first was his Lady's being big with Child, whom he could not expose to the Hardships of Travelling by Sea or Land in that Condition, and the next was to what Place of the World he should steer his Course; for if he purchased a Commission in any Roman Catholick Country, he was apprehensive of bad Treatment if his Story happened to be discovered, and if he entered into the Service of a Protestant Prince, he must dissemble his being a Roman Catholick which neither his Confcience nor his Honour could bear the Thoughts of; so that he was quite undetermined when his Lady brought

:

t

p

he

brought him a Son, and this dear Pledge of their Love augmented his Melancholy, from the perplexing Thoughts how he was to prcvide for his Wife and Child, and perhaps a more numerous Family in the Sequel; and tho' his Spouse was dearer to him than ever, he repented his not having waited till his Father's Death (after which he could have fold his Estate, and remitted the Money arising from it into some foreign Country) before he attempted to bring off his Mistress, by which Means they would have had a Competency to fubfist with; this Reflection drew often heavy Sighs from his Breaft, which he endeavoured, however, to smother but when he was by himself.

n

V

e;

ce-

y's

not

by

ext

ould

om.

atry,

f his

if he

ince,

Ca

or his

o that

Lady rought

THE Effects of this Gentleman's Melancholy foon appeared in a visible Change of his Health, which rendered him unfit for Service of any Kind, and, in short, for I have, I dare fay, encroached terribly upon your Patience, after a Wasting Sort of Illness for three or four Months, he was feized with a violent Fever, which carried him off in three or four Days, and left the Poor disconfolate Emilia in a Condition which I shall pass over in Silence, not being capable to paint it in proper Colours; and if she survived this terrible Loss it could only be attributed to her Tenderness for a Son whom his Father had recommended to her Care when he was breathing out his Last. She had about ten Thousand Livers when her Husband died, which she lent to the City of Geneva at

5 per Cent. Interest, with which yearly Income joined to her own indefatigable Industry in Embroidery for Shop Keepers, the has given her Son the Education of a Gentleman, and is resolved, when he is of Age, to go into the Army to purchase a Commission for him in France, if it can be procured, or in Savoy failing that, and to support herself by her Needle, which I am told fhe can very well do. Here the concluded her Narration which drew Tears of Compassion from the Countess, and really would have likewise from me, had I not been obliged to keep up to my manly Character. We all, however, unanimously agreed that this poor Lady deferved a better Fate, and admired her Virtue and Refolution.

THE Counters, at the Desire of her Hulband, returned the Thanks of the Company to Miss Courbon for her Complaisance, and after every one in particular had made her what Compliment they thought proper upon the agreeable Manner in which she had related this affecting Story, we took Leave of the Aunt and her, and returned to our Lodgings, where we passed the Remainder of the Evening in making our Remarks upon this Adventure.

As the Count had by this Time settled all his Affairs, he told me that he was now ready to leave Paris as soon as I thought proper; I told him that I had something to propose with Regard to our Travels, which

W2

t

han I

was, however, afraid to mention after what he had already granted. Speak freely, Sir, faid he, and as I believe it is not in your Power to ask any Thing that may be unreasonable, or inconvenient to my Wife or me, I will venture, in her Name, as well as in my own, to tell you before-hand that your Request will be granted, if it is not that we will consent to your leaving us, that indeed would give me Concern, and I believe I should not very readily agree to it.

As what I am to propose, answered I, may prolong your Absence from Auvergne a Month or so more than by the Route that we had at first laid down, it may, perhaps, be inconvenient and unreasonable upon that Account; however, if it should be so, I will drop my Proposal, and rather deprive myself of the Satisfaction of seeing some Part of France, which I cannot before I go to Italy, according to our first Plan, than of the Pleasure of your Company.

I would willingly take the grand Route to Bordeaux, from thence afcend the River Garonne to Toulouze, and from that to Lyons, taking Toulon and Marseilles in our Way, and from Lyons to proceed to Auvergne, but I am afraid such a long out about Way will frighten the Countess. No, no, cried she hastily, I am not at all frightned at the Thoughts of a long Journey, and if it is agreeable to the Count you have my Approbation.

Vol. I.

d

ld

16-

ny

her

noo

lat-

ngs,

ven-

Ad-

ttled

now

digue

ng to

hich

Was

THE next Day I went to my Aunt's Convent to bid her Adieu, and to receive her Commands. My dear Niece, said she, tho' I am not without Fears about your Project, yet I cannot condemn it, since, were I at Liberty, I should with Pleasure accompany you in the same Disguise, such a Passion have I to see and know the World; but since my Condition and Profession deny me a Satisfaction of this Kind, I hope you'll not result me that of corresponding with me from time to time, by way of a Journal of what you happen

C

happen to meet with that is remarkable in your Travels, addressing your Letters to our Friend Pigeot, who will take Care to deliver them punctually; this will be an Advantage to yourself, as well as a Satisfaction to me; and I expect that Proof of your Affection.

You may be affured, my dear Aunt replied I, of any thing in my Power to oblige you; and if my triffling Remarks can afford you any Diversion, you may depend upon my Exactness in writing what I think will be agreeable to you; and I hope, in Return, you'll remember me in your Prayers; that my Duty obliges me to, answered she, without your making it your Request, and I have too great an Affection for you not to put up, every Day, my most ardent Prayers for your Preservation.

I

ve

n-

ier

10'

et,

at

ny

ave

my

tif-

fuse

me

you

pen

I shall not, my dear Niece, added she, represent that you are now going to launch out, as it were, into a boisterous Sea, where it requires great Skill and Art to steer a steddy Course: You will be exposed to many Dangers in different Shapes, but I know your Virtue to be Proof against every thing that is vicious; and that though Whim and Frolick may carry you to certain Lengths, yet you will never deviate from the Strictness of Modesty, the only valuable Ornament of our Sex; but I shall not take up your Time and my own, in moralising to one who stands in no Need of my Advice how to regulate

her Conduct; only beg that you'll let me know, from time to time, what happens to you in the Course of your Travels; that you'll give me Descriptions of the Countries and Cities, and particularly Rome, that modern as well as ancient Glory of the World, not forgetting the Antiquities you shall meet with there as in other Places: I am fenfible that I impose a laborious Task upon you, but I hope your Friendship for me will make you chearfully undertake it; and now, my dearest Niece, as the Duties of my Profession require my Attendance elsewhere, I shall only wish you all Happiness, and that Heaven may protect you wherever you go: Upon which she retired, with Tears in her Eyes, left me weeping, and not able to pronounce one fingle Word, fo much I was moved with this affecting Scene, and which had fuch an Impression on me, that the Moment I got to my Lodgings I shut myfelf up in my Chamber, where I made many ferious Reflections upon the Part that I was going to act upon the Stage of Life; sometimes condemning my Rashness, in exposing myfelf to a thouland Accidents which I had no Occasion to risk, nor any Motive for my so doing, but to fatisfy an extravagant Curiofity, which I could not but condemn myfelf, and was for some Time at a Stand whether I should not drop my whimfical Project; but I now experienced, in myself, what I have often condemned in other Women; viz. that neither what our own Reason suggests, nor the Advice of Friends can prevail with us to relinguish

Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 329 relinquish a Gratification which does not directly clash with Modesty.

WILL not, faid I within myfelf, the Knowledge of the World contribute much to cure me of Prepossessions and Weaknesses incident to my Sex, not to speak of Ignorance, which, by the Manner of our Education, is a Missortune that we cannot avoid?

WILL not the Accomplishments and Virtues of some eminent Women, whom I may happen to meet with in the Course of my Travels excite me to Emulation? and on the other Hand shall I not be disgusted with the unguarded Behaviour and Follies of others? from both which I may draw Lessons extremely useful in the Conduct of Life.

e

bi

1-

oles

y-

no

fo

10-

elf,

rI

t I

ten

rei-

the

to

ish

Besides, can I not appear to be a Man without giving into the Extravagancies of your Rakes and Debauchees? Thanks to my Sex I am in no Danger one Way; and for any thing else, barring obscene Language. I can appear to be as extravagant as the best of them, that's to fay, make Love to every Woman I meet with, appear as paffionate as tis possible for a Man of Gallantry to be, and press hard for Favours which I cannot receive; but if I should happen to meet with any complying Fair, I will always take Care to throw Obstacles in the Way to disappoint her Expectations, without bringing myfelf under any Suspicion; thus I shall divert myself Ff 3 with

with the Foibles of my Sex, and learn from them to guard against such Baits, if they should happen to be laid against me when I throw off my masculine Dress.

AFTER many such Resections, all tending to confirm me in my travelling Design, I at last concluded that it might be executed without any Danger to my Reputation, even after the Public came to be informed of it, and determined to bar the Door against all Doubts or Scruples which might offer in Opposition to it.

FIXED in this Resolution I went to the Count's Apartment, where I found a Jesuit, and a Gentleman whom I did not know, nor do I remember his Name; but by a Conversation which he had with the Priest, I soon discovered that he was one of those Freethinkers, with which Paris, and indeed all France, now abounds.

A little after I came in the Conversation turned upon Deism, and I believe it will be agreeable, at least to some of my Readers, to give them an Abstract of what was said upon this Subject; the Gentleman began in the following Manner.

<sup>\*</sup> THE Supreme Being requires no other Worship but the Love of his infinite Per-

fections, from whence flow all the Virtues

human and divine. All the Philosophers,

- all the Wise Men, all Nations have had
- fome Idea of this natural Religion; but
- they have blended it with Tenets more or
- e less true, and have expressed it by a Wor-
- fhip more or less proper.
- All Sorts of Religions are agreeable to the Sovereign Being, while Men make Use
- of the Ceremonies, Opinions, and even of
- the Errors of their Sect, to carry them to
- the Adoration of the Deity. There must
- ' indeed be an outward Worship; but the
- different Forms of this Worship are like
- the different Forms of Civil Government,
- " more or less good, according to the Use
- that is made of them.
- I admire the Morality of the Gospel,
- but all the speculative Opinions are Things
- indifferent, of which the Sovereign Wif-
- dom makes little Account.

#### To this the PRIEST answered.

- You cannot continue in your philoso-
- phical Independence, without looking up-
- on Christianity as an Imposture; for there
- is no Medium betwixt Deism and Ca-
- · tholicity.

II

nc

be

rs.

aid

in

her

ers,

211

- THIS Notion appeared to the Gentle-
- man to be a Paradox, and he begged him
- to explain it, which he did in the following
- · Manner,

WE must either confine ourselves to natural Religion, sounded upon the Idea of God, and reject all supernatural and re-

e vealed Laws; or, if we admit a superna-

tural Revelation, we must acknowledge fome supreme Authority continually speak-

ing to interpret it.

fixed and visible Authority, would be like a Republic, to which wise Laws had been given, but without Magistrates to put them in Execution. What a Source of Confusion. Each particular Man with the Book of Laws in his Hand, would come to dispute about their Meaning. This Book would only serve to feed our vain Curiosity, to increase our Pride and Presumption, and to make us more tenacious of our own Opinions.

THERE would indeed be but one Original Text, but as many different Manners of explaining it as there were Men. Divisions, and Sub-divisions would multiply without End, and without Remedy. Can we imagine that our Sovereign Lawgiver has not provided better for the Peace of his Republic, and for the Preservation of his Law?

MOREOVER, if there be no infallible Authority, which may fay to us all, This is the true Meaning of the Holy Scripture:

Peafants, or simple Mechanicks, should engage in a Discussion, wherein the Learned themselves cannot agree? God would have been wanting to the Necessities of almost all Men, if, when he gave them a written Law, he had not at the same Time provided them a sure Interpreter, to spare them an Inquiry, of which they are incapable.

EVERY simple and sincere Man of common Sense must perceive the Ridiculousness of Sects, who found their Separation upon the Offer to make him Judge of such Matters as are beyond the Reach of his Capacity. Whether are we to believe the new Reformers, who require that which is impossible, or the ancient Church which provides for the Weakness of Men?

In fine, we must either reject the Bible as a Fiction, or submit to this Church. Consult the sacred Writings. Examine the Extent of the Promises made by Jesus Christ to the Hierarchy, the Depositary of his Law.

1-

n.

1-

y.

w-

on

ble

This

rip-

re:

HE says, that, what soever it shall bind on Earth, shall be bound in Heaven; that he will be with it to the End of the World; that the Gates of Hell shall not prevail against it; that he who hears it, hears him; that he who despises it, despises him; and

and in fine, that it is the Basis and Pillar of Truth.

You cannot evade the Force of these Expressions by any Commentary; you have no Remedy but by rejecting the Authority both of the Law-giver and of his Law.

WHAT, said the Gentleman with some Emotion, would you have me look upon any Society on Earth as infallible? I have run through the most Part of the different Sects; allow me to tell you with all due Respect, the Priests of all Religions are oftentimes more corrupt or more ignorant than the rest of Men. I equally suspect them all.

THE Priest answered with great Meekness and Moderation. If we do not raise our Thoughts above what is human in the most numerous Assembles of the Church, we shall find nothing but Matter to shock and offend us; and to increase our Incredulity, we shall discover nothing but Passions, Prejudices, human Weaknesses, politic Views, Factions and Cabals. But we ought so much the more to admire the Wisdom and Almighty Power of God, in that he accomplishes his Designs by such Means as seem naturally to tend to

their Destruction.

'Tis here that the Holy Spirit shews himself Master of the Heart of Man. makes every Thing that feems defective in the particular Pastors serve as a Means to the Accomplishment of his Promises; and, by a Providence continually attentive, watches the Moment of their Decision, and renders it conformable to his Will.

'IT is thus that God acts in all and by 'all. Both the Civil and Ecclefiastical ' Powers are held in a total Subjection to his Laws. Every Thing accomplishes his De-' figns, either freely or by Necessity. It is not the Holiness of our Superiors, nor their personal Talents which make our Obedience a divine Virtue, but the inward Submission of the Mind to the Order of God.

. ot

in

er

Se

ng

k.

ils.

ire od,

by

to I

TIS

' I fee plainly, faid the Gentleman, that there is no Medium between Deifm and Catholicity, but rather than believe all that Catholicks commonly believe, I chuse to throw myself into the other Extreme. I intrench myself in that pure Deism which is equally removed from an infipid Credulity, and an extravagant Incredulity.

' My Faith disengaged from the Multiplicity of uncertain, fubtile, and fhocking Opinions, confines itself to the Respect which it pays to the Deity, and to the immutable Ideas of pure Virtue, without of this Religion of Nature, a Man has

only to enter into his own Breaft.'

'How few are there, replied the Priest,
'who are capable of entering so into themfelves, to consult the Dictates of pure
'Reason? The refined Passions of the
'Mind are no less blinding than those of a

grosser Nature. First Truths are sometimes over-looked by first-rate Genius's.

There are no fixed Principles to be found that can stop the Torrent of Uncertain-

ties which hurries them along.

As in civil Societies, it was necessary to tut Reason into Writing, to reduce its Precepts into a Body of Laws; to estab-' lish Magistrates for their Execution, because all Men are not in a Condition to confult and follow of themselves the Law of Nature: So likewise in Religion, Men ' not being disposed to hear with Attention ' the internal Voice of Sovereign Wisdom, nothing was more worthy of God than to ' speak himself to his Creature in a sensible Manner, in order to convince the incredulous, fix the Visionaries, instruct the ig-' norant, and re-unite all in the Belief of the same Truths, the Practise of the ' same Worship, and in a Submission to the fame Church

WHY would you quarrel with a Help for necessary for human Weakness, and with-

out which the most learned and polite Na-

tions have fallen into the grossest Errors with regard to the Deity and the Duties of

' Morality.'

'THE Religion of Nature, said the Gentleman, interrupting him hastily, is common to all Minds, to all Nations, to all Religions. We even find the Traces of it in the Bosom of Paganism. Simple and artless Souls have perhaps better practised it than the Philosophers have talked of it.

EVERY Sect has mixed with it some absurd Opinions. I find such in the Bible as well as elsewhere. But excuse me, Father, from talking upon this Head. I am asraid of dealing too freely with Things that I know not.'

THE Priest remained some Time silent, and then answered him in this Manner.

HE who has not gone through all those Struggles which you feel in the Way to Truth, is unacquainted with its Value. Unbosom yourself to me, and be not asraid of shocking me. I see your Wound, it is deep, but not without Remedy, since you lay it open.

Vol. I.

0

W

n

n, to

ole

u-

ig-

lief

the

the

HY

Gg

UPON

Upon which the Gentleman proceeded thus:

' THE Lawgiver of the Fews appears to me to reprefent the Sovereign Being as a 'Tyrant, who makes all Mankind mifer-

able, because the first Parents ate of a for-

bidden Fruit.

IT was impossible that before their Existence they should have any Share in that ' trivial Fault, and yet God punishes them for it, not only by Bodily Sufferings and Death, but by giving them over to all their Passions, and in the End to eternal Pu-' nishments. According to the common Be-· lief God forgets all other Nations of the Earth to mind only a stupid, rebellious, unjust and cruel People, whose Doctrines and Manners feem unworthy of the Deity.

A fecond Lawgiver comes. His Morality is more sublime, and his Manness more pure. I do not pretend to fay with certain bold Wits, that he was an Impostor. I believe him to have been an excellent Philosopher, who had no other View but to make Men good and happy, by teaching them the true Worship of the Supreme Being. But the pretended Depositaries of this Law have drowned it in a Multitude of absurd Fables, obscure Doctrines, and firvolous Opinions that degrade the Divi-" nity.' THE

THE Priest heard him out to the End. with a wonderful Tranquility, and then said,

God has so tempered the Light and the Shade in his holy Oracles, that this Mixture is a Source of Life to those who seek the Truth in Order to love it; and an Abyss of Darkness to those who will withstand it, that they may flatter their Passions. The greatest Part of the Objections you have been making, are false and malicious Turns, which are given by incredulous Men to Religion. Hear me, I beseech you with Attention for one Instant, and I will give

at m

u-

ehe

us,

nes

y.

10.

ers

vith

tor.

lent

but

hing

eme of

le of

fri

Divi

THE

Attention for one Instant, and I will give you another Plan of the Bible.

him as He deserves, before they be admitted to see him as He is. The luminous Vision of his Essence would invincibly determine us to love him; but he seeks to be loved with a free Love, a Love of bare Choice. 'Tis for this Reason that all free Beings pass through a State of Tryal before they arrive at the supreme Happiness of their Nature, so that the Beginning of their Existence is a Novice-ship, a Time for the Probation of their Love.

THE Angels and our first Parents having abused their Liberty in a Paradise of Immortality and Pleasures, God changed our State of Trial into a mortal State, wherein good and Evil are mingled together; to the G g 2 End

End that our Experience of the Vanity and Nothingness of the Creatures might carry us to aspire continually after a better Life.

SINCE that Time we all come into the World difeased, but the Remedy is ever at ' Hand to cure us. The Light which en-' lightens every Man that comes into the World is never wanting. That Sovereign Wisdom has manifested itself differently according to the different Times and Places; to some by a supernatural Law, and • the Miracles of the Prophets; to others by the Law of Nature, and the wonderful Works of the Creation. Every Man shall be judged by the Law which he has known, and not by that which he has not known. · No one shall be condemned but for neglecting to profit by what he knew, that he might merit to know more, \*

God came himself at last, cloathed in the Likeness of our Flesh, to expiate Sin, and to give us a Pattern of that Worship which is due to him. He cannot Pardon the Criminal without shewing his Detestation of the Crime. This is what he owes to his Justice, and this is what our Saviour alone could do. He has shewn to Men, to Angels, and to all the Heavenly Spirits the infinate Aversion of the Deity for the Violation of Order, since it cost such that

and Agonies to the Man God. 'Tis in this Sense that the Saviour is our Sacrifice. but he is our Model alfo.

' This Sacrifice of Jesus Christ, offered up in Homage to the divine Sanctity, his profound Annihilation before the Supreme Being, and his infinite Love of Order shall be the everlasting Pattern of the Love, Adoration and Homage of all Intelligent Natures. They shall thence learn what is due to the Infinite Being, when they be-' hold the Worship he pays to himself by his holy Humanity.

' THE Religion of this eternal High Priest confifts only in Charity. The Sacraments, the Ceremonies; the Priest-bood are but falutary Aids to fuccour our Weakness; outward and fensible Signs to encrease in our Selves and others the Knowledge and Love of our common Father; or in fine, e necessary Means to keep us within the Bounds of Order, Union, and Obedience.

VERY foon these Means shall cease; the Shadows shall disappear, the true Temple ' shall be opened; our Bodies shall be raifed again glorious, and God shall com-' municate eternally with his Creatures, not only as a Being purely divine, but under a human Form, that he may shew us at once both the Mysteries of his Essence and the Wonders of his Creation.

e

6

8

d

Gg 3

You have here the general Plan of Providence. This is, so to speak, the Philosophy of the Bible. Can any Thing be more worthy of God or give greater Confolation to Man than these high and noble Ideas? ought we not to wish them true, tho' we were not able to demonstrate the truth of them.

But may we not suppose, said the Gentleman, that Moses and Jesus Christ have formed this fine System meerly as Philosophers, and without any divine Mission? may they not have seigned an Intercourse with the Deity, not to deceive Men, but to gain Credit to their Law, and to make us good and happy by instructing us in true Mortality?

To this the Priest answered: Mosts and Jesus Christ have proved their Mission by supernatural Works, which bear the Character of an infinite Wisdom and Power.

I shall say nothing of the Miracles of Moses, nor of the uncorrupted Transmission to our Time of those Books which contain the History of them, neither shall mention the Prophecies contained in them non speak of the Jewish People who shall after the total Destruction of all the ancient Nations formerly so valiant and powerful a

#### Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 343

You will see that Matter excellently well treated in Monsseur de Meaux's Discourse upon Universal History. He has shewn the continued Chain of Tradition from the Beginning of the World, and has strengthned it by Resections, which equally discover the greatness of his Capacity and of his Knowledge.

-

n

e

n-

ve

0-

n?

rfe

but

ake

in

ofes

fion

OW.

es of

miff

vhich

Tha

them

o ffi

arth

ncien verful

Yo

' I shall fay nothing of the Events foretold in those ancient Books, which required not only a divine Wisdom to foresee them, but an infinite Power to accom-' plish them. Such was the Conversion of the Gentiles to Christianity, an Event, which depending on the free Co-operation of Man, demonstrates plainly that the God who revealed it had an uncommunicable Power over his Heart. But without entering into the Particulars of those Facts, which so evidently prove that the Jewish Law, was given from above, I come directly to Christianity. In demonstrating the Truth of the latter we establish the Authority of the former, fince the Christian Lawgiver has supposed it Divine.

ont done in a Corner, in impenetrable Hiding-places, or deep Caverns, but before the Face of a whole People, who were Enemies and incredulous. They were afterwards published and renewed by the Apostles in many different Nations, who were powerfully interested to make the

Cheat appear in Case they had been Counterfeit. Our Lord feeds a Multitude of People with four Loaves. He recovers the incurable with a fingle Word. He calls ' up the dead from the Grave. He raises bimfelf from Death. Every thing is notorious and publick, and in which the least Imposture might have been easily difcovered. Here was nothing of delufive Arts to bewitch the Eyes, no Legerdemain, onor subtle Operations of Physical Science; the Facts were all palpable and visible, contrary to the common Laws of Nature. ' The Simple and the Learned were equally Iudges of them, and need only to open their Eyes to be convinced of their Rea-· lity.

<sup>6</sup> 2. The principal Eye-witnesses of these miraculous Deeds cannot be suspected. 'Tis possible that Men through Infatuation and Prejudice may fuffer all Sorts of · Hardships in the Defence of speculative Errors, because they may be really perfuaded that they are Truths; but that ' Men without View of Pleasure or Ambi-' tion, of temporal or eternal Recompence, fhould expose themselves to all Kinds of ' Calamities in this Life, and after it to ' the revenging Justice of a God who hates Falshood, to maintain that they have heard with their Ears, and feen with their Eyes, ' fuch Things as never were: This difinterested Love of Evil is absolutely incombatable with human Nature, and can never be fupposed, especially in Men who past their Lives in practising and teaching the most sublime Morality that was ever heard of.

4 3. THE Religion of Moses confidered feparately, and without Respect to Christianity, might possibly be suspected of ' politick Views. It might be faid, that the Magicians of Egypt having imitated a Part of the Wonders wrought by him, he only excelled them in the Magick Art. But in the Religion of Jesus Christ there is no Pretext for Incredulity, no Shadow of human Policy, no Footstep of Worldly ' Interest. The Miracles of the Lawgiver evince his Mission to be divine, and the · Purity of his Law proves that his Miracles were not deluding Enchantments. When a Legislature has a Mind to deceive Men by false Miracles, and to bring them under his Government by abufing their Credulity; does he invent a Religion which mortifies the whole Man, makes him become an Alien and a Stranger to himself, overthrows the Idolatry of Self-love, ob-' liges us to love God more than ourselves, and not to love ourfelves but for his Sake? ' Fesus Christ has taught us to look upon this Life, this infinitely short Moment of our Banishment here below, as the Infancy of our Being, and as an obscure Night in which all the Pleasures we meet with are but transient Dreams, and all the Evils we feel but wholesome Bitternesses to. · make

make us loath this World, and prefs forward to our true and native Country. Penetrated with the Sense of our Nothinge ness, our Inability, and Blindness, he would have us continually prefent, and expose ourselves before the Being of Beings, to the End that he may impress again his Image upon our Souls, and at length, being made totally conformable to him, he may absorb and consummate us in his divine Unity. This is that Worship in Spirit and in Truth of which the Gospel fpeaks; the Worship which Man finds so agreeable to his natural Ideas, when it is once discovered to him; a Worship nevertheless of which we scarce see any Traces in the most refined Paganism. It was but late, and after that Christianity had enlightened the World, that the Pagan, Arabian, and Persian Philosophers borrowed this Language, which they have always

Inghtened the World, that the Pagan,
Arabian, and Persian Philosophers borrowed
this Language, which they have always
spoken impersectly.

4. All is Union in Jesus Christ; his
Life is agreeable to his Doctrine. This
divine Legislator does not think it enough
to give Men the dry Precepts of a sublime
Morality. He puts it himself in Practice,
and sets us the Example of an accomplished
Virtue, which neither has nor pretends
to any Thing upon Earth. His whole
Life is but a Tissue of Sufferings, a perpetual Adoration, a prosound Humiliation
before the Supreme Being, an unbounded
Submission to the divine Will, and an infinite

#### Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 347

'finite Love of Order. Is it possible any where else to find either such a Law or such

a Law-giver?

,

9

-

el

So

is

T-

es

ut

n-

an,

ved

245

his

ugh

lime

tice,

shed

tends

hole

per-

ation

inded

n in

finite

' 5. THE Establishment of such a Religion amongst Men is the greatest of all ' Miracles. In spite of all the ancient Ro-' man Power, in spite of all the Passions Interests, and Prejudices of so many Nations, ' fo many Philosophers, so many different Religions, twelve poor Fishermen without Art, without Eloquence, without Power, published and spread their Doctrine throughout the World. In Spite of a Persecution for three Centuries, which feemed ready every Moment to extinguish it; in Spite of continued and innumerable Martyrdoms of Persons of all Conditions, Sexes, and Countries, Truth in the End triumphs over Error, pursuant to the Predictions both of the old and new Law. Let any one shew some other Religion which has the same Marks of a divine Protection. A powerful Conqueror may establish by his Arms the Belief of a Religion which flatters the Senfuality of Men; a wife Legiflator may gain himself Attention and Respect by the Usefulness of his Laws; a Sect in Credit, and supported by the Civil Power, may abuse the Credulity of the People; all this is possible. But what could victorious, learned, and incredulous Nations see, to induce them so readily to submit to Jesus Christ, who promised them nothing in this World but Persecutions

" and

and Sufferings, who proposed to them the

Belief of Mifteries, which shock the Understanding of Man, and the Practice of

a Morality which facrifices all our Darling

Passions? In one Word, a Faith and a Worship, which drive our Reason and

our Self-love to the Extremity of De-

fpair.

Do we find these five Marks of Truth in the pretended Miracles of Magicians, or the Impostures of Appollonius and Ma-

homet? They may out of Ostentation

have presented the People with some pub-

lick Shew, in order to furprize, amuse,

and captivate them: But have they done any Miracle fo publickly notorious, and

feen by such Witnesses? Have they

taught a Doctrine fo sublime, and accompanied it with Manners so pure, or

have they spread it over the Face of the

Earth by Means so opposite to what may

be called political?

#### To this the Gentleman replied.

fay; the high Ideas which you give

" me of the Christian Doctrine, the noble

Sentiments which it inspires, and the com-

fortable Hopes it affords, evidently prove

that the Christan Legislator surpassed all the others. But may it not be said that

this Philosopher, being himself persuaded

that his Morality was the only Worth

worthy of the Supreme Being, and that his System was the only Means of rendering us happy here and hereafter, believed himfelf obliged, out of Respect to the Diety and Good-will towards Men, to give Credit to his Law, by seigning a secret Communication with the Almighty; that he chose twelve simple and ignorant Men, to the End that he might conceal from them, or perhaps persuade them more easily of his innocent and generous Illusion.

THIS Stratagem succeeded with them. and was by Degrees spread about, at first by Persuasion, and at Length by Force, when the Christians became the most numerous and most powerful. The Priests then, who make Use of Religion to govern the People, might they not have departed from the first and noble Designs of the Legislator, converted every thing into Politick, added Tenets to the System of Morality, flipt Passages into the original Writings, favouring the imperious Power which they endeavour to usurp over the Multitude, and, in fine, disguised, exaggerated, and supposed Facts unknown at the Beginning. For if the Miracles which were mentioned were true, is it possible that the Yews could have stood out against their Evidence, or that Authors cotemporary should have said so little about them?

Vol. I.

1

1-

on b-

ne

nd

rey

ac-

10

the

may

you

give

noble

com.

prove

ed all

d that

orship

Hh

THERE

the Father, of the Truth of these Facts. The Books which contain the History of them were received, and translated by great Numbers of People of different Countries as soon as they appeared: They have been in publick Assemblies in almost all Nations, from Age to Age, and yet no body ever taxed them with being salse; neither Jews nor Pagans, nor Hereticks, who were powerfully interested to oppose them, and to make the Imposture appear.

· THE Jews indeed alledged, that Jesus " Christ had performed his Miracles by the · Power of Magick, but they never rejected them as Forgeries. Is it furprifing that a People under Expectation of a Messiah, who was to load them with all temporal Bleffings, and to extend their Dominion over the whole Face of the Earth, should be irritated against a Legislator who overturned all their flattering Hopes. We know how far the Passions influence the Mind, and how much the Heart blinds it. Is it aftonishing that this People should rather chuse to look upon the Miracles of Jesus Christ as Delusions, than to embrace a Law, which proposes no other Pleafures but these of Virtue, nor other Happi-' ness but a future Immortality?

6

6

.

'THE Pagans could no more difallow those Facts than the Jews. Celsus, Porphyry, Julian the Apostate, Plotinus and the other Philosophers, who from the Beginning attacked Christianity, with all ' imaginable Subtilty, acknowledged the 'Truth of our Saviour's Miracles, the Sanctity of his Life, and the Authenticke nels of those Books which give us the ' History of them. The Silence of cotem-' porary Authors with the Apostles proves ' nothing. The Philosophers just now men-' tioned never brought this Silence as an Obe jection.

'IF Christianity be an Imposture, and if the Illusion has been concealed so as to deceive all Nations, it might have been eafily confummated, by flipping in formal Passages in the cotemporary Authors, to prevent an Objection which gives fo much 'Umbrage. The Simplicity of this Conduct proves the Veracity of the Facts which are advanced.

ld

r-

Te. he

ds

ıld

les

m-

ea-

pi-

HE

'In fine, the numerous and fuccessive Sectaries, which in every Age have difturbed the Peace of the Church, uncontestably prove, that it would have been impossible to corrupt the facred Originals without a Discovery of the Imposture; so that if we go back from Age to Age, to fesus Christ himself, we shall see Christians, Hereticks, Jews, Pagans, Greeks, Ro-

Hh2

- mans, Barbarians, all giving Testimony
- to the same Facts, and to the same
- Books.
- As the Certainty of our Ideas depends upon the Universality and Immutability of
- their Evidence; fo the Certainty of Facts
- depends upon the Universality and Immu-
- tabiliy of the Tradition by which they are
- confirmed.
- IT is impossible to make first one whole
- Nation, and afterwards many different
- Nations, believe that they have feen with
- their Eyes, and heard with their Ears,
- fuch Things as never were; that the Me-
- mory of these invented Facts should be per-
- \* petuated openly, successively and univer-
- ' fally, in all Ages by different Nations,
- of opposite Interests, Religion, and Pre-
- ' judices; that these Nations should con-
- fpire with their Enemies to spread abroad a
- Delusion which confounds and condemns
- them; and that, nevertheless, neither at
- ' the Time of the Forgery, nor in the Ages
- following, it should ever be discovered;
- this, I say, is not only incredible, but ab-
- folutely impossible.
- I own Father, said the Gentleman, that
- the Morality and the Facts of the Christian
- Religion would not shock me. I see no-
- thing in the one that is not sublime, nor in the others that is not possible; but I
- would gladly separate the noble Ideas of
  - which

#### Mademoiseile de Richelieu.

which you have been speaking from those Things which the Priests call Misteries.

THE low and mercenary Ideas which are commonly entertained of Religion, were, I thought, unworthy of a divine Mission. I suspected the Miracles of the Law-giver, while I was unacquainted with the Beauty of his Law. But why do we find in the Bible such a shocking Contrast of luminous Truths and obscure Doctrines?

WHEREFORE, answered he, would you reject so many luminous Truths which console the Heart, because they are mingled with Shades which humble the Understanding? Ought not the true Religion to elevate and abase Men, to shew him at once both the Grandeur and Weakness of his Nature? You have as yet too narrow a Notion of Christianity. It is not only a holy Law to purify the Will, it is also a misterious Wisdom to subdue the Understanding. It is a continual Sacrifice of the whole Man, in Homage to the Sovereign Reason.

ns

at

es

i;

b-

hat

ian

10-

nor

t I

of

rich

THE Practice of Christian Morality is a renouncing of Pleasures for the Love of the Supreme Beauty. The Belief of the Gospel Misteries is a respectful Sacrifice of our Ideas to the eternal Truth. Without this double Offering of our Thoughts and Passions the Holocaust is imperfect.

• perfect, our Victim is defective. It is by this Means only that the whole Man is, as it were, annihilated before the Being of Beings.

Our Business is not to enquire whether it be necessary that God should thus reveal Misteries to us for the humbling of our Minds, but rather to know whether he has revealed any or not. If he has vouchfafed to fpeak to his Creatures, all that love him will obey his Voice. You are to consider the Christian Revelation as a Fact. Since you no longer doubt of the Proofs of this Fact, you are no longer at Liberty to chuse what you will believe and what not. When the Mind is once cured of its Presumption, all those Difficulties, whereof you have brought together fome Instances, vanish in a Moment. We can then easily believe, that there is a Depth in the Divine Nature, and in the Conduct of his Providence, which is not to be fathomed by the short Line of our Rea-fon. The Infinite Being must of Necessity be incomprehensible to the Creas ture.

On the one hand we behold a Legistlator, whose Law is altogether divine, and who proves his Mission by miraculous Works, of which we cannot doubt, since the Reasons we have to believe them are so strong and cogent. We find on the other Hand divers Misseries which shock

hock our Understanding. What shall we do between these two perplexing Extremes of a clear Revelation, and an incomprehenfible Obscurity? We have no Way 4 left but to facrifice our Understanding, and this Sacrifice is one Part of the Worship due to the Sovereign Being.

' Has not God an infinite Variety of Knowledge which we have not? when he discovers any of his Secrets to us by a Supernatural way, our Business is not to examine the Manner of those Mysteries, but the Certainty of their Revelation. They feem to us inconfiftent, without being fo in Reality; and this feeming Inconfiftency arises from the Scantiness and narrow Limits of our Understanding, which can not reach to see the Connexion of our natural Ideas with these supernatural Truths.

U

25

he

at

nd

red

ies,

me

can h in

t of

fa-

Rea-

Ne-

egif-

and

culous

fince

them

nd on which

· Chock

CHRISTIANITY adds nothing to your pure Deism but the Sacrifice of the Underflanding, and the Catholick Faith does but s compleat this Sacrifice. We have, pros perly speaking, but two Articles of Religion, the Love of an invisible God, and Obedience to his Living Oracle the Church. · All the other particular Truths are eminently contained in these two simple and universal ones, which are within the Reach of every Capacity. Can any thing be more worthy of the divine Perfection, or more e necessary for the Weakness of Men?

THE Gentleman then faid : 'I have no longer any Difficulty about the incomprehenfible Doctrines of Faith, but about certain Opinions which have unawares crept in among the Priests and the People. May not the Christian Law, as well as the Fewish, have been obscured by uncertain Traditions? I am persuaded that the Church will never teach any Errors which are dangerous or damnable; but may she not tollerate certain innocent Errors as being useful and necessary in the present Weakness of human Nature? Such, for Example, is the Notion of eternal Punish-6 ments. and resistant that bear willed had andes from the Mantine's and parvow Li

than to free the Minds of Men from this falutary Fear. But there is nothing in the natural Ideas we have of the Deity, nor even in the Holy Scripture to hinder us from believing, that sooner or later all Beings will return to Order. This was the Solution which Origen hit upon to justify all the Steps of Providence. This furnishes an Answer to all the Objections which Celsus, Mr. Baile, and all other Unbelievers, whether ancient or modern, have formed against the Christian System. Leave me but this single Idea; I give you up all the rest.

worthy of the divine Perfection, or more necessary for the Weakness of Men?

BHI

No, no, faid the Father, I will leave you no Refuge to escape the Sacrifice of your Understanding. Should we suppose that the Church might tolerate some innocent Mistakes, yet since she never will teach any dangerous Error, which can juftify a Rebellion, and the throwing off our Dependance, why do you delay to submit, and to lose in the Incomprehensibility of God all those vain Speculations, which might limit and fet Bounds to your Obedience? This Life is but a dark Night, in which we are not allowed to reason upon the Secrets of the divine Nature, or the impenetrable Designs of his Providence. One Moment more, and all will be un-' veiled. God will justify his Conduct. We fhall fee that his Wisdom, Justice, and Goodness, are always concordant and infeparable. 'Tis our Pride, and our Impatience which make us unwilling to wait for this Unravelling. Instead of using that Ray of Light which is left us, as a Guide to lead us out of our Darkness, we lose it ' in a Labyrinth of Disputes, Errors, chimerical Systems, and particular Sects, which not only disturb the present Peace of ' human Society, but indispose us for the true Life of all intelligent Natures, who have on Understanding or Will of their own, but are enlightened by the same universal Reason, and are moved and animated by the same Sovereign Love.

HITHERTO you have fought to possess Truth. Truth must now captivate and oposses you, and strip you of all the false Riches of your Understanding. Before we can be perfect Christians, we must be disappropriated of every Thing, even of our Ideas themselves. No Religion but the Christian teaches this Evangelical Poverty. Impose this Silence upon your Imagination and your Reason. Say continual-' ly to God; instruct me by the Heart and onot by the Understanding: Make me beblieve as the Saints have believed: Make " me love as the Saints have loved. By this Means you will be fecured from all Incredulity.

Northing is more clearly proved, faid the Gentleman, in Metaphysicks than the Existence of a Being infinite, perfect, and eternal, that's to fay GOD; but the · Immortality of the Soul does not appear to carry with it the same Clearness and Strength of Proof, at least by the little that I have read. What appears to me to be the best Proof is, that as we are perfeetly fensible of its Unity, it is not subject to Division of Parts as Bodies, and confequently to destroy it, a particular Will of God would be necessary, as one was requifite for its Creation. This Reason answers equally for the Immortality of Matter, and can amount to no more than Probabi-6 lity,

OTRIBETIES !

tl.

V.

Lity, which is not fufficient.' This is my first Difficulty.

- ' 2. THE Immortality of the Soul being eftablished, the Question still is to prove the Necessity of a Worship, and what Relation there can be between the Infinite and the Finite, that this Worship may be agreeable.
- 3. It must be made appear that we are free Agents, otherwise we are answerable for nothing. Now, as we have within us an invincible Defire to be happy, and an Intelligence necessitated to acknowledge 'an evident Truth which appears, it must be shewn, that our Wit is not a Balance necessarily counterpoised by the Idea of the 4 greatest Good.
- 'I cannot doubt but that it is possible to prove these Truths in a clearer, shorter, more interesting, and exacter Manner, ' than has been hitherto done: I should be glad to fee fuch a Work as this which would be of infinite Use.'

n

e

ır

ıd

le

ne

rect

fe-

of

ui-

rers

ter, abiity,

HERE the Gentleman left off speaking, and the Priest made the following Discourse containing Proofs of the Being of a God, the Liberty of Man, the Necessity of a divine Worship, and the Immortality of the

THERE must of Necessity be something eternal, nothing could not produce the Things which are. That Being which exists of itself is for no other Reason Eternal, but because it carries within itself the Necessity of its Existence. All finite Beings may either be or not be. Every supposed Infinite, or Infinite in all Respects, has nothing in it self to make it exist preserably to an Infinite of a Superior Degree; so that its Existence is not necessary. The self existent Being, the infinite Being, the absolute Infinite, are therefore synonimous Terms. It is for this Reason that God defines himself He that is.

MULTIPLICITY is poor in its feeming Abundance. The absolute Infinite is supremely one, and supremely all. He is all Being, and not all Beings. He exists, knows himself, and loves himself always alike. He contains all that is real in all Beings by an indivisible Simplicity, and not a Composition of Parts. He knows all that is knowable in knowing himself. He loves all that is lovely in loving himfelf. He can do all that is possible by the simple Act of his Will. We do not fee his Essence, but we have here a clear Idea of his effential Properties. It is, I confess, but an · infinitely small Perception of the infinitely great Being, but it is a very real one, and · fuch as diffinguishes him from all other Beings whether finite or infinite, in one Refe pect only.

· SINCE

It is by him slove SINCE the absolute Infinite is the only Being which exists of itself; fince finite Beings cannot be small Parts taken off from his ' indivisible Substance; it necessarily follows, that he has a real Power of making that to be which was not before: We have no ' Idea of this creating Power, but fuch a Power there must be in God, or the Ex-istence of finite Beings would be impossi-\* ble

THE Action by which God has created all Things is never discontinued. 'Tis plain that he every Moment gives Being. because he can every Moment take it away. Now he cannot take it away but by ceafing to give it, or by giving nothing: but nothing cannot be communicated. The Preservation therefore of the Creatures is a perpetual Gift, that is to fay, a continued Creation. A Being which holds its Exiftence in Dependance, cannot but be dependant on its Operations. The Creatures act, as they exist. Their Activity as well as their Being is every Moment communicated to them. What a wide Field of Truth is here opened to the Mind?

f

g

1-

all

ws

He

by

m-

ves

can

t of

nce, Ten-

t an

and

r Be-

Ref-

IT is God alone who creates all, and he is the fole Agent in his Work. It is he, who being every where present, gives Form and Motion to the corporeal World, Light and Love to the Intellectual. It is he who makes the one intelligible, and Vol. I. Ιi the

the other intelligent. It is by him alone that they correspond to each other, pur-

fuant to certain general Laws, which he

has established for the Preservation of Or-

der and Union in his Works.

SECOND Causes are but the mere Occafions of his Action, which we don't perceive because of its Delicacy, and which we
falsy attribute to the Creatures and to
ourselves, thereby usurping the Rights of
the Divinity. There is no Shadow of real
Power in finite Beings, but that of our
Liberty, by which we are enabled to confent, or not to consent, to the divine Action, which illuminates, excites, and moves
us.

THE Impulse which is given us by God towards good in general, is the Ground and Effence of the Will, and the Spring of all our Loves. But this Impulse never carries us irrefiftibly towards any particular Good. we can always stop to examine whether the Good that presents itself be real or imaginary, whether according to Order, or contrary to it; whether good in itself, or only pleasing to us. We can by · Consequence give Way to the Action of God upon us, either from Virtuous or sen-' fual, rational or pleasurable Considerations, from a reverential Regard to his adorable · Perfections, or from the Relish of our agreeable Sensations. Here we see the two-fold Billianic and add salam ed Spring Spring, by which our Liberty is explained.

'This Power of confenting to the divine Action does not suppose an infinite Strength in the Creature. It produces neither the Object, nor the Action of the Object, nor the Motion towards the Object. Our Action is of itself always barren. The Ac-' tion of God is what alone produces all our luminous and beautifying Perceptions. It is the only Source of all the Truths, and of all the Pleasures by which we are moved. This Activity (or this Power of ' chufing) like our Being, is a continued Gift of God. We have a Being different from his, and in like Manner we have an · Activity distinct from his. But as our Being can not exist independently of his, fo ' neither can our Action produce any Thing without his. His Action does all in all according to certain Laws which he has eftablished.

THE universal Rule by which God communicates himself to free Beings, is to do
it more or less, as they more or less give
Way to his Action. When the Creature
sins, it is not necessary to suppose it endowed with a Strength equal to the Creator's, whereby it may put a Stop to the
Action of God; it is God himself who
strops. He ceases to Act, because the Terms
or Condition upon which he Acts is wanting.

I i 2

' THE Sight of the Sovereign Good, difplayed without Covering or Veil, would invincibly determine every finite Intelligence to cleave and adhere to it. this the Creatures might do, either to pay ' Homage to its infinite Perfection, or in order only to the Enjoyment of Happiness, 'To seperate these two Sorts of Love is to commit a Sacrilege. No Method was more worthy of the divine Wisdom for the confirming us eternally in the pure Love of Order, than to raise us to it by a State of Tryal, wherein we have continual Occasions of Sacrificing our pleasurable Senfations to the pure Idea of his infinite Perfection. The only Reason then why he has made us free, is that we might be capable of pure Love.

from his Creature, and the eternal Condition of our Union with him. Order requires that we would love his infinite Perfection more than our finite Perfection. Every Creature is but a bounded, communicated and dependent good: whereas the first Being is properly the Only good, the Source of all other good, the unbounded and independent Good. Our Love of this good ought likewise to be a peculiar kind of Love, the Source of all our Loves, a Love without Bounds, and independent of all other Love. On the contrary, the Love

of our felves ought to be a Love derived

from

from this primitive Love, a Rivulet from this Source, a bounded Love, a Love proportioned to the small Portion of Good which is fallen to our Lot. This is that true Worship from which God cannot difpense any intelligent Creature, and without which he cannot unite himself to it. God is all, and we are but a meer Nothing, cloathed with a small Particle of borrowed Being. That Self which we love fo dearly is, fo to speak, but a little Part which seeks to be the All, and falfly challenges divine Honours. The Idol must be thrown down, that it may be reduced to its own little Place. When this Foundation is once laid. the whole Edifice will rife as it were of it felf. We shall find the whole of Religion unfolded in our Heart.

.

-

ne

Ets

di-

re-

er-

ion.

reas

nded

this

kine

es, 1

nt of

Love

rived

from

Man, and the true Nature of religious Worship being once established, the Immortality of the Soul necessarily follows from these three Principles.

We are capable of knowing and of loving to Infinity. God could have no other End in creating a Being with so vast a Capacity but to make himself known to it as the Sovereign Truth, and to make himself loved by it as the universal Goodness. Man does not in this Life accomplish this Design of his Maker. All his Employments and Occupations here below are unworthy of so noble a Capacity. Now

Ii 3

it is impossible that God should create Be-

ings to know and to love him to Infinity, without ever fulfilling the Defign of their

Creation, unless they render themselves

incapable of it by their own Fault,

This Inconfishency would be infinitely unworthy the Wisdom and Goodness of

God who cannot deffroy a Being that loves

him, and which he has created for no other End but to love him. Supposing then, that

the Soul were material and mortal by its

Nature, it might become immortal by Love.3

It was thus the good Father brought Atheists to be Deists, Deists to be Christians, and Christians to be Catholicks, by a well connected Chain of Ideas and Reasonings, which abounded with Light, and with noble Sentiments. All his Arguments centered in the Love of Order, and all flowed from thence. This great and noble Idea gave Strength, Beauty, Elevation and Unity to all his Principles. I do not pretend here to demonstrate the Truth of this System; but I intreat the incredulous to shew me another, all the Parts of which are so closely knit together, a System so fruitful in luminous Consequences, and so satisfactory to the Mind and Heart.

WE were all so charmed with this Conversation that we were forry when it was at End, and every one of us, in our Turns, expressed our Acknowledgment to the Reverend

#### Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 367

rend Father for defending the Christian Religion in so glorious a Manner, and by Proofs so convincing, that Incredulity could not possibly stand its Ground; for my Part, what he had said gave me so great Satisfaction that no Words were capable to express it.

THE Count complimented him in that genteel Manner of which he is fo much Master, that few Men equal and none exceed him: Dear Father, faid he, you have established our Religion in so clear a Manner, that even I could now deal with your Free-thinkers and Deifts, though before I durst not venture to enter the Lists with them, nay I even thought some of their Objections unanswerable, but you have now drawn the Veil from before my Eyes, and I plainly fee what I thought intricate and dark in the Christian System; but were it not the Fear of fatiguing you with too much fpeaking, I would ask you one Favour more which is this; that as you have intirely fettled me with regard to my religious Principles, you would favour me with your Thoughts upon political Principles, which, though not so necessary as the former, a Man converfant in the World ought likewife to be fettled and fixed in.

SIR, answered he smiling, I might easily excuse myself from granting your Request from Reasons of Inability, which might be alledged without a Blush by a Man of my

Profession; but though I ought, perhaps, to do so rather than expose the Weakness of my Capacity in obeying your Commands, yet I chuse rather to shew you my Ignorance than to give you Occasion to suspect my Inclination to oblige you in every Shape, and with that View I shall frankly tell you my Sentiments upon Politicks, which are these.

ALL the Nations of the Earth are but so many different Families of one and the fame Republick, of which God is the Common Father. The natural and universal Law, by which he would have each Family governed is, to prefer the publick Good to

private Interest. IF Men were guided by this Law, every one would be fwayed by Reason and · Friendship in the doing of what he does at present only for Interest, or through Fear. But we are fo blinded and corrupted by our Passions, that we neither love nor understand this great Law. It has become necessary to explain it, and put it in Execution by National Laws, and confequently to establish a Supreme Authority which might judge in dernier Reffort, and to which all might have Recourse as to the Fountain of Political Unity and Civil · Order; otherwise there would be as many arbitrary Governments as Men.

LOVE of the People, the publick Good, the common Interest of the Society, is then the immutable and univerfal Law by which Sovereigns are to rule. This Law is antecedent to all Contract. It is founded in Nature itself. 'Tis the Source of all other Laws, and the Rule by which they should be made. He who governs, ought to pay the ' most perfect Obedience to this primitive Law. He has absolute Power over the People, but this Law should have absolute ' Power over him. The common Father of ' the great Family has committed the Care of his Children to him for no other End but their Happiness. His Intention is that one fingle Man should minister by his Wifdom to the Felicity of fo great a Number, and not that fo great a Number should ferve by their Misery to flatter the Pride of one Man. It is not for his own Sake that he is made a King by God, but only to be the Guardian of the People; and he is no farther worthy of the royal Dignity than as he forgets himself for the Sake of the publick Good.

d

25

r-

er It

ut

nd

ho-

ort,

s to

ivil

any

ood,

then

s the

by despotick Sway, is a Violation of the common Rights of Men, as Brethren. It is an intire Overturning of the great Law of Nature, to maintain and support which is their only Office. Despotick Power in the Multitude is a senseless blind Power, which turns frantick and surious against itself. A People that has been spoiled by an Excess of Liberty is the most insupportable of all Tyrants. The Wisdom of every Government

Government consists in finding the Middle between these two dreadful Extremes, in a Liberty which is bounded and restrained by the sole Authority of the Laws. But so blind are Men, and so much their own Enemies, that they cannot confine them-

felves to this just Medium."

SAD Condition of human Nature! · Princes, jealous of their Power, are always for enlarging it. The People fond of their Liberty, are ever for augmenting it. It is better, however, patiently to fuffer for the Sake of Order those Evils which are unavoidable even in the best regulated States, than to shake off the Yoke of all Authority, and to abandon ourselves to the wild Fury of the Multitude, who act e neither by Rule nor Law. When, therefore, the Supreme Power, is once lodged, by foundamental Laws, in one alone, in a few, or in many, we ought to bear the Abuses of it, till we can find a Remedy confistent with Order.

ALL Sorts of Government are of Necessity imperfect, because the Supreme Authority must of Necessity be trusted in the Hands of those who are but Men. And all Kinds of Governments are good when the Governors act by the great Law of the publick Weal. In the Theory, some certain Forms appear more eligible than others; but in the Practice we find, that the Inconveniencies to which all States are ex-

· posed

of Men (all subject to the same Passions) are pretty near equal. It very seldom fails but the Monarch, or the Senate, is wholly influenced and led by two or three Men.

'THE Happiness then of human Society is not to be obtained by changing and over-turning the established Forms, but by suggesting to Princes, that the Safety of their Government depends upon the Happiness of their Subjects, and by inculcating upon the People; that in order to their solid Happiness, there must be a Subordination. Liberty without Order is a Licentiousness which brings arbitrary Power. Order without Liberty is a Slavery which ends in Anarchy.

On the one hand, Princes should be taught, that to govern with unlimited Power is a Madness which proves ruinous to their just Authority. When Sovereigns accustom themselves to know no other Law but their absolute Will, they sap the Foundations of their Dominion. There will come a sudden and violent Revolution, which instead of restraining their excessive Power, will irrecoverably put an End to it.

On the other hand, the People should be made sensible, that Kings being liable to Hatereds, Jealousies, and involuntary Mistakes, which have terrible but unforseen Consequences, are to be pitied and excused. Men

e

ed

· are unhappy in that they are to be governed

by a King who is but a Man like them-

· selves; for it would need a Divine Wisdom

to reform and conduct them. But Kings

are not less unfortunate, being but Men,

that is to fay weak and imperfect, to have

· fuch a numberless Multitude of corrupt and

· deceitful Men to govern.

It was by these Maxims, equally adapted to all States, that the wise Mentor endeavoured to make his Country happy, in maintaining the due Subordination of Ranks. It was thus that he reconciled the Liberty of the People with Obedience to Sovereigns; seeking to make Men at the same Time good Common-wealth's Men, and loyal Subjects, submissive without being Slaves, and free without being licentious. The pure Love of Order is the Fountain of all his political as well as of his religious Virtues. The same Unity of Principles prevails throughout all his Senti-

tom the nfelves to know no other strom us

511:

HERE the Priest left of speaking; and getting up from his Chair made the Company a low Bow, and wishing us all Happiness in our intended Journey, went out of the Room along with the Gentleman who had disputed with him upon Religion.

End of the First Volume.

and involuntary



